# EliScholar - A Digital Platform for Scholarly Publishing at Yale 

# Copula-Based Time Series With Filtered Nonstationarity 

Xiaohong Chen<br>Yale University<br>Zhijie Xiao<br>Bo Wang

Follow this and additional works at: https://elischolar.library.yale.edu/cowles-discussion-paper-series
Part of the Economics Commons

## Recommended Citation

Chen, Xiaohong; Xiao, Zhijie; and Wang, Bo, "Copula-Based Time Series With Filtered Nonstationarity" (2020). Cowles Foundation Discussion Papers. 2583.
https://elischolar.library.yale.edu/cowles-discussion-paper-series/2583

This Discussion Paper is brought to you for free and open access by the Cowles Foundation at EliScholar - A Digital Platform for Scholarly Publishing at Yale. It has been accepted for inclusion in Cowles Foundation Discussion Papers by an authorized administrator of EliScholar - A Digital Platform for Scholarly Publishing at Yale. For more information, please contact elischolar@yale.edu.

# COPULA-BASED TIME SERIES WITH FILTERED NONSTATIONARITY 

By
Xiaohong Chen, Zhijie Xiao, and Bo Wang

July 2020
Revised October 2020

COWLES FOUNDATION DISCUSSION PAPER NO. 2242R


COWLES FOUNDATION FOR RESEARCH IN ECONOMICS YALE UNIVERSITY

Box 208281
New Haven, Connecticut 06520-8281
http://cowles.yale.edu/

# Copula-Based Time Series With Filtered Nonstationarity 

Xiaohong Chen*<br>Yale University

Zhijie Xiao ${ }^{\dagger}$
Boston College

Bo Wang ${ }^{\ddagger}$<br>Boston College

First version: March 2014; Final version: October 2020.


#### Abstract

Economic and financial time series data can exhibit nonstationary and nonlinear patterns simultaneously. This paper studies copula-based time series models that capture both patterns. We introduce a procedure where nonstationarity is removed via a filtration, and then the nonlinear temporal dependence in the filtered data is captured via a flexible Markov copula. We propose two estimators of the copula dependence parameters: the parametric (two-step) copula estimator where the marginal distribution of the filtered series is estimated parametrically; and the semiparametric (two-step) copula estimator where the marginal distribution is estimated via a rescaled empirical distribution of the filtered series. We show that the limiting distribution of the parametric copula estimator depends on the nonstationary filtration and the parametric marginal distribution estimation, and may be non-normal. Surprisingly, the limiting distribution of the semiparametric copula estimator using the filtered data is shown to be the same as that without nonstationary filtration, which is normal and free of marginal distribution specification. The simple and robust properties of the semiparametric copula estimators extend to models with misspecified copulas, and facilitate statistical inferences, such as hypothesis testing and model selection tests, on semiparametric copula-based dynamic models in the presence of nonstationarity. Monte Carlo studies and real data applications are presented.


JEL code: C14, C22.
Keywords: Residual copula, Cointegration, Unit Root, Nonstationarity, Nonlinearity, Tail Dependence, Semiparametric, Generated regressors, GNP and CAY residuals.

[^0]
## 1. Introduction

Nonstationarity and nonlinearity are important empirical features in economic and financial time series. For many economic time series, nonstationary behavior is often the most dominant characteristic. Some series grow in a secular way over long periods of time, others appear to wander around as if they have no fixed population mean. Growth characteristics are especially evident in time series that represent aggregate economic behavior. Random wandering behavior is also evident in many financial time series. In addition, existing literature (e.g. Gallant, Rossi, Tauchen (1993), Granger (2002), Gallant (2009)) points out that the classical linear time series modelling based on the Gaussian distribution assumption clearly fails to explain the stylized facts observed in economic and financial data, and that it is highly undesirable to perform various economic policy evaluations, financial forecasts, and risk managements based on linear Gaussian models.

Econometric analysis that ignores either nonstationarity or nonlinearity may lead to erroneous inference for policy evaluations and financial applications. Deterministic or stochastic trend components are commonly used to capture persistent and trending types nonstationarity in time series. In the presence of a deterministic trend, detrending methods are often used to extract this trend and the residuals are then analyzed as a stationary time series. Unit root and cointegration models are widely used to model stochastic trends in economic time series. For stationary series, copula-based Markov models provide a rich source of potential nonlinear dynamics describing temporal dependence and tail dependence, without imposing any restrictions on marginal distributions. See, e.g., Joe (1997), Chen and Fan (2006a), Patton (2006, 2009, 2012), Ibragimov (2009), Cherubini, et al (2012) and the references therein. However, existing large sample theories for estimation and inference on the copula-based time series models rule out nonstationarity.

An important issue is that nonstationarity and nonlinearity can occur simultaneously. In this paper, we study copula-based time series models that can capture nonstationarity and nonlinearity (and tail dependence). We propose a sequential procedure where nonstationarity is first removed via a filtration, and then the nonlinear temporal dependence (and the tail dependence) in the filtered series is captured by a copula-based first-order stationary Markov model. We are interested in simple estimation and inference on the copula dependence parameter for the deterministic or stochastic detrended series. We focus on the sequential approach due to its easy implementation in empirical applications.

An advantage of copula-based modeling approach is to leave the marginal distribution completely free of parametric assumptions. Nevertheless, many empirical researchers still like to assume a parametric functional form of the marginal distribution and estimate it parametrically before proceeding to estimate the copula dependence parameters. For the sake of comparison, we consider both the parametric (two-step) copula estimation where the marginal distribution of the filtered series belongs
to a parametric family, and the semiparametric (two-step) copula estimation where the marginal distribution of the filtered series is nonparametric. Without nonstationary filtering and for observable stationary Markov data, both copula estimators are shown to be asymptotically normal, while the semiparametric copula estimator is obviously robust to misspecification of the marginal distribution. We show that the copula estimators using nonstationary filtered data have very different properties, however. In particular, the limiting distribution of the parametric (two-step) copula estimator is affected by the nonstationary filtration and the parametric marginal distribution estimation, and may be non-normal in the presence of stochastic trends (unit root or cointegration). While the parametric copula estimator using deterministic trend filtered data is shown to be asymptotically normal, its asymptotic variance still depends on the filtrating and the parametric marginal specification in a complicated way. Surprisingly, we show that the limiting distribution of the semiparametric (two-step) copula estimator using the filtered data is the same as that without nonstationary filtration, which is normal and free of marginal distribution specification.

Previously, Chen and Fan (2006b) use parametric copula to generate contemporaneous dependence among multivariate standardized innovations of observed weakly-dependent multivariate time series, where the standardized innovations have no serial dependence. They established that the limiting distribution of their semiparametric two-step copula estimator does not depend on the stationary parametric filtering in the first step. Recently, Chen, Huang and Yi (2020) generalize their result to stationary nonparametric GARCH filtered multivariate series. It is interesting that these papers and our work all establish the surprising "no-filtering-effect" in semiparametric two-step copula parameter estimation. Nevertheless, our result cannot be derived from theirs. While Chen and Fan (2006b) and Chen, Huang and Yi (2020) consider the contemporaneous copula dependence among multivariate standardized innovations that are orthogonal to the stationary dynamic filtering part, our paper studies the temporal copula dependence of univariate non-stationary filtered residuals, and there is dependence among the nonstationary (stochastic trending) and the stationary parts in our setting.

While this surprising result is first derived for models with correctly specified parametric copulas in Section 3, we show in Section 4 that the limiting distribution of the semiparametric copula estimator (for the pseudo-true parameter) is still not affected by the nonstationary filtration even in misspecified parametric copula models. The simple and robust properties of the semiparametric copula estimators greatly facilitate statistical inferences, such as hypothesis testing and model selection tests, on semiparametric copula-based dynamic models in the presence of nonstationarity. It is well-known that there is not enough time series data to accurately estimate the tail dependence fully nonparametrically and that a semiparametric temporal copula model captures the tail dependence. Our "no-filtering-effect" of semiparametric two-step copula estimation, testing and model selection on possibly misspecified parametric residual copula models are particularly useful to empirical researchers
who care about tail dependence in short term dynamics of the nonstationary filtered time series.
Monte Carlo studies reveal interesting finite sample behaviors of the parametric and the semiparametric (two-step) copula estimators under various combinations of nonstationary filtration, correctlyand incorrectly- specified marginal distribution of the filtered series, and copula function specification (with or without tail dependence). Simulation evidences (in terms of biases and variances) indicate that the finite sample performance of parametric copula estimator is indeed very sensitive to different types of filtration and the parametric estimation of marginal distributions. The semiparametric copula estimator not only is robust to specification of marginal distributions, but also performs very similarly to the infeasible semiparametric estimator without nonstationary filtering. In comparison to the parametric copula estimator with correctly specified parametric marginal distributions, the semiparametric estimator has reasonably good sampling performance over a wide range of copula parameter values. Simulation patterns are consistent with our theoretical findings.

To illustrate the practical usefulness of our theoretical results, we first apply our method to estimate the short term dynamics in the (USA) GNP time series after the cointegrating regression of GNP on consumption series. Our semiparametric copula estimation and testing using the filtered data detect both lower and upper tail dependence in the GNP series, although the lower tail dependence is stronger. We next apply our method to the famous "CAY" time series that was first constructed in Lettau and Ludvigson (2001), which is the residual term from a cointegrating regression of consumption $\left(\mathbf{c}_{t}\right)$ on asset holding $\left(\mathbf{a}_{t}\right)$ and labor income $\left(\mathbf{y}_{t}\right)$. According to Lettau and Ludvigson (2001) and many subsequent work, the "CAY" time series contain important information of future returns at short horizons. Our semiparametric copula estimation and testing detect very significant lower tail dependence and weak upper tail dependence in the "CAY" series.

The rest of the paper is organized as follows. Section 2 introduces the model. Section 3 presents estimation of copula parameters for both the parametric and semiparametric models of the filtered data. It also obtains the large sample properties of the parametric and semiparametric copula estimators. Section 4 considers estimation under possibly misspecified copula models. It also presents Wald test and semiparametric copula model selection tests using nonstationary filtered data. Section 5 presents Monte Carlo studies. Section 6 provides empirical applications. Section 7 briefly concludes with future research. Appendix A and the Online Appendix C display tables summarizing the Monte Carlo results. Appendix B and the Online Appendix D contain all the technical proofs. Notation: $B M\left(\omega^{2}\right)$ denotes a Brownian motion with variance $\omega^{2}$. For a generic parameter, say, $\beta$, we denote the true parameter value by $\beta^{*}$, the pseudo-true value by $\bar{\beta}$ and a feasible estimator by $\widehat{\beta}$. The expectation $\mathrm{E}[W]$, the conditional expectation $\mathrm{E}[W \mid V]$ and the variance $\operatorname{Var}[W]$ are all taken under the true data generating process (DGP).

## 2. The Model

We assume that the observed scalar time series $\left\{Z_{t}\right\}_{t=1}^{n}$ can be modelled as

$$
\begin{equation*}
Z_{t}=X_{t}^{\prime} \pi^{*}+Y_{t} \tag{2.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $X_{t}^{\prime} \pi^{*}$ is the nonstationary component in which $X_{t}$ is an observed $d_{x}$-dimensional vector of nonstationary regressors. For example, $X_{t}$ may contain deterministic trends, unit root or near unit root nonstationary time series. $Y_{t}$ is the latent stationary ergodic component that could exhibit nonlinear temporal dependence and/or tail dependence.

Estimation of the parameter $\pi^{*}$ in model (2.1) is by now standard (usually an OLS regression of $Z_{t}$ on $X_{t}$ ) and is not the focus of our paper. Instead we are interested in estimation of the copula parameter $\beta$ that captures stationary nonlinear temporal dependence in $\left\{Y_{t}\right\}_{t=1}^{n}$. Unfortunately $\left\{Y_{t}\right\}_{t=1}^{n}$ is unobserved. We shall estimate the latent temporal dependence parameter $\beta$ and study its asymptotic properties based on the filtered time series $\left\{\widehat{Y}_{t}\right\}_{t=1}^{n}$, where

$$
\begin{equation*}
\widehat{Y}_{t} \equiv Z_{t}-X_{t}^{\prime} \widehat{\pi} \tag{2.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

and $\widehat{\pi}$ denotes some nonstationary filtering estimator for $\pi^{*}$. We state the basic regularity conditions on the nonstationary part and the stationary part as follows. The assumptions about the nonstationary part $\left\{X_{t}^{\prime} \pi^{*}\right\}_{t=1}^{n}$ are the typical ones for trend, unit roots and cointegration, and the assumptions about the stationary part $\left\{Y_{t}\right\}_{t=1}^{n}$ are the same as those in Chen and Fan (2006a).

Due to the nonstationarity in $X_{t}$, in the next assumption we introduce appropriate re-standardization via a scaling matrix $D_{n}$ to facilitate asymptotic analysis.
Assumption X. In model (2.1), the elements in $X_{t}$ can be either a deterministic trend function, or an unit root or local to unit root process such that

$$
\left[\begin{array}{c}
Y_{n}(r) \\
X_{n}(r)
\end{array}\right] \equiv\left[\begin{array}{c}
n^{-1 / 2} \sum_{t=1}^{[n r]} Y_{t} \\
n^{1 / 2} D_{n}^{-1} X_{[n r]}
\end{array}\right] \Rightarrow\left[\begin{array}{c}
B_{Y}(r) \\
X(r)
\end{array}\right], r \in[0,1] \quad \text { as } \quad n \rightarrow \infty
$$

where $B_{Y}(r)$ is a Brownian motion, $X(r)$ is a vector of stochastic or deterministic functions. And

$$
D_{n}\left(\widehat{\pi}-\pi^{*}\right) \Rightarrow \xi \quad \text { as } \quad n \rightarrow \infty .
$$

In the above assumption, $X(\cdot)$ may be stochastic processes such as Brownian motions, or deterministic functions, or mixtures of both. In the case when $X(\cdot)$ contains stochastic functions, they can be correlated with $B_{Y}(\cdot)$. The limiting distribution of the filtration parameter, $\xi$, is a function of $\left(X(\cdot)^{\prime}, B_{Y}(\cdot)\right)$ and may not be a normal variate. We give below a few examples that are widely used in time series applications. In all the examples, we let $\widehat{\pi}$ be the OLS estimator of $\pi^{*}$.

Example 1. Trending Time Series. $X_{t}$ is a vector of deterministic trend function and $X_{n}(r) \rightarrow$ $X(r)$, where $X(r)$ is a piecewise continuous limiting trending function. (For example, if $Z_{t}=$ $\pi_{0}^{*}+\pi_{1}^{*} t+Y_{t}$, then $X_{t}=(1, t)^{\prime}$ and $X(r)=(1, r)^{\prime}$, and the standardization matrix is $D_{n}=$ $\operatorname{diag}\left(n^{1 / 2}, n^{3 / 2}\right)$.) Let $Y_{n}(r) \Rightarrow B_{Y}(r)=B M\left(\omega_{Y}^{2}\right)$. Then:

$$
D_{n}\left(\widehat{\pi}-\pi^{*}\right) \Rightarrow \xi_{1}, \quad \xi_{1}=\left[\int X(r) X(r)^{\prime} d r\right]^{-1}\left[\int X(r) d B_{Y}(r)\right]
$$

where $\xi_{1}$ is a normal random variable with mean zero and variance matrix $\omega_{Y}^{2}\left[\int X(r) X(r)^{\prime} d r\right]^{-1}$.
Example 2. Time Series with a Root Close to Unity. $X_{t}=Z_{t-1}$ and $\pi^{*}=1+c / n$. Thus $X_{t}=Z_{t-1}$ can be a unit root $(c=0)$ or local to unit root process. $D_{n}=n$, and $X_{n}(r)=$ $n^{-1 / 2} X_{[n r]} \Rightarrow X(r)=J_{c}(r)=\int_{0}^{r} e^{(r-s) c} d B_{Y}(s)$, where $J_{c}(r)$ is a Ornstein-Uhlenbeck process. If $c=0, J_{0}(r)=B_{Y}(r)$ is simply a Brownian motion. The OLS filtration estimators $\widehat{\pi}$ converges at the rate- $n$ to a non-normal limit $\xi_{2}$ :

$$
n\left(\widehat{\pi}-\pi^{*}\right) \Rightarrow \xi_{2}, \quad \xi_{2}=\left[\int_{0}^{1} J_{c}(r)^{2} d r\right]^{-1}\left[\int_{0}^{1} J_{c}(r) d B_{Y}(r)+\lambda\right] \quad \text { with } \lambda=\sum_{h=1}^{\infty} E\left(Y_{1} Y_{1+h}\right) .
$$

Example 3 Cointegrated Time Series. $X_{t}=\left(X_{1 t}^{\prime}, X_{2 t}^{\prime}\right)^{\prime}$, where $X_{1 t}$ is a vector of deterministic trend, and $X_{2 t}$ is a vector of stochastic nonstationary process, then

$$
n^{1 / 2} D_{1 n}^{-1} X_{1,[n r]} \rightarrow X_{1}(r), \quad n^{-1 / 2} X_{2,[n r]} \Rightarrow B_{2}(r)=B M\left(\omega_{2}^{2}\right),
$$

$X_{1}(r)$ is the limiting trending function, and $B_{2}(r)$ is a stochastic process. Then

$$
X_{n}(r)=n^{1 / 2} D_{n}^{-1} X_{[n r]} \Rightarrow X(r)=\left[\begin{array}{l}
X_{1}(r) \\
B_{2}(r)
\end{array}\right] \quad \text { with } D_{n}=\operatorname{diag}\left\{D_{1 n}, n, \cdots, n\right\} .
$$

The OLS filtration estimators $\widehat{\pi}$ has the following non-normal limit $\xi_{3}$ :
$D_{n}\left(\widehat{\pi}-\pi^{*}\right) \Rightarrow \xi_{3}, \quad \xi_{3}=\left[\int X(r) X(r)^{\prime} d r\right]^{-1}\left[\int X(r)^{\prime} d B_{Y}(r)+\Lambda_{X Y}\right] \quad$ with $\Lambda_{X Y}^{\prime}=\left[0, \Lambda_{2 Y}^{\prime}\right]$, where, in general cointegration applications, $\Lambda_{2 Y} \neq 0, B_{2}(r)$ is usually correlated with $B_{Y}(r)$, and $\left[\int B_{2}(r) B_{2}(r)^{\prime} d r\right]^{-1} \int B_{2}(r) d B_{Y}(r)$ is asymmetrically distributed.

We make the following basic assumptions on the latent process $\left\{Y_{t}\right\}$, which are also imposed in Chen and Fan (2006a).
Assumption DGP: (1). $\left\{Y_{t}\right\}_{t=1}^{n}$ in model (2.1) is a stationary first-order Markov process generated from $\left(F^{*}(\cdot), C^{*}(\cdot, \cdot)\right)$, where $F^{*}(\cdot)$ is the true invariant distribution that is absolutely continuous with respect to Lebesgue measure on the real line; $C^{*}(\cdot, \cdot)$ is the true copula function for $\left(Y_{t-1}, Y_{t}\right)$, and is
absolutely continuous with respect to Lebesgue measure on $[0,1]^{2}$. (2) $C^{*}(\cdot, \cdot)=C\left(\cdot, \cdot ; \beta^{*}\right)$ for $\beta^{*} \in \mathfrak{B}$ a compact subset of $\mathcal{R}^{k}$.
Assumption MX: $\left\{Y_{t}\right\}$ is absolutely regular with mixing coefficient $\beta(\tau)=O\left(\tau^{-\delta}\right)$, with $\delta>$ $q /(q-1)$ for some constant $q>1$.

Under Assumption DGP(1), by Sklar's (1959) theorem, the probabilistic properties of $\left\{Y_{t}\right\}_{t=1}^{n}$ is uniquely determined by the true conditional density of $Y_{t}$ given $Y_{t-1}$ :

$$
p\left(y_{t} \mid y_{t-1}\right)=f^{*}\left(y_{t}\right) c^{*}\left(F^{*}\left(y_{t-1}\right), F^{*}\left(y_{t}\right)\right),
$$

where $f^{*}(\cdot)$ is the true invariant density (of $\left.F^{*}(\cdot)\right)$ and $c^{*}(\cdot, \cdot)$ is the true copula density (of $C^{*}(\cdot, \cdot)$ ). Let $U_{t} \equiv F^{*}\left(Y_{t}\right)$. Then $\left\{U_{t}\right\}_{t=1}^{n}$ is a strictly stationary first-order Markov process with uniform marginal distributions and the true joint distribution of $\left(U_{t-1}, U_{t}\right)$ is given by $C^{*}\left(u_{t-1}, u_{t}\right)$

For simplicity, Assumption $\operatorname{DGP}(1)$ assumes that $\left\{Y_{t}\right\}_{t=1}^{n}$ is a first-order stationary Markov process, although higher order Markov process of $\left\{Y_{t}\right\}_{t=1}^{n}$ can be handled similarly (see, e.g., Ibragimov, 2009). Assumption DGP automatically implies that $\left\{Y_{t}\right\}_{t=1}^{n}$ is absolutely regular (or beta-mixing). Assumption MX only imposes a mild polynomial mixing decay rate, which is satisfied by commonly used parametric copulas. See Chen and Fan (2006a), Chen, Wu and Yi (2009), Beare (2010), Longla and Peligrad (2012) and others for sufficient conditions that commonly used copula-based Markov processes are geometric ergodic and hence absolutely regular with exponentially decaying mixing coefficients.

In this paper, a parametric copula density family $\{c(\cdot, \cdot ; \beta): \beta \in \mathfrak{B}\}$ with $\mathfrak{B}$ a compact subset of $\mathcal{R}^{k}$, can be correctly specified as assumed in Assumption DGP(2) (and Section 3) or incorrectly specified in the sense that $c^{*}(\cdot, \cdot) \notin\{c(\cdot, \cdot ; \beta): \beta \in \mathfrak{B}\}$ (as in Section 4). Under Assumption DGP(1) and some mild regularity conditions, we can define a uniquely pseudo-true value $\bar{\beta} \in \mathfrak{B}$ as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\bar{\beta}=\arg \max _{\beta \in \mathfrak{B}} \int_{0}^{1} \int_{0}^{1}[\log c(u, v, \beta)] \times c^{*}(u, v) d u d v=\arg \min _{\beta \in \mathfrak{B}} \operatorname{KLIC}\left(c^{*}, c(\cdot, \cdot, \beta)\right) \tag{2.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

where, following White (1982), $\operatorname{KLIC}\left(c^{*}, c(\cdot, \cdot, \beta)\right)$ is the Kullback-Leibler Information Criterion (KLIC) between a parametric copula density $c(\cdot, \cdot ; \beta)$ and the unknown true copula density $c^{*}(\cdot, \cdot)$ :

$$
\operatorname{KLIC}\left(c^{*}, c(\cdot, \beta)\right)=\int_{0}^{1} \int_{0}^{1}\left[\log c^{*}(u, v)-\log c(u, v, \beta)\right] \times c^{*}(u, v) d u d v \geq 0
$$

Under Assumption $\operatorname{DGP}(2)$ (i.e., the parametric copula function $C(u, v, \beta)$ is correctly specified) then $\bar{\beta}=\beta^{*}$ (the true parameter value) and $\operatorname{KLIC}\left(c^{*}, c(\cdot, \bar{\beta})\right)=0$. We say the copula function is incorrectly specified if $\operatorname{KLIC}\left(c^{*}, c(\cdot, \bar{\beta})\right)>0$.

Regardless if the parametric copula density $c(u, v, \beta)$ is correctly specified or not, the following notation is used throughout the paper. Let $\ell(u, v, \beta)=\log c(u, v, \beta)$, and

$$
\frac{\partial \ell(u, v, \beta)}{\partial \beta}=\ell_{\beta}(u, v, \beta), \frac{\partial \ell(u, v, \beta)}{\partial u}=\ell_{1}(u, v, \beta), \frac{\partial \ell(u, v, \beta)}{\partial v}=\ell_{2}(u, v, \beta),
$$

$$
\begin{gather*}
\frac{\partial \ell_{\beta}(u, v, \beta)}{\partial u}=\ell_{\beta 1}(u, v, \beta), \frac{\partial \ell_{\beta}(u, v, \beta)}{\partial v}=\ell_{\beta 2}(u, v, \beta), \frac{\partial \ell_{\beta}(u, v, \beta)}{\partial \beta}=\ell_{\beta \beta}(u, v, \beta) . \\
\Omega_{\beta}=\mathrm{E}\left[\ell_{\beta}\left(U_{t-1}, U_{t}, \beta\right) \ell_{\beta}\left(U_{t-1}, U_{t}, \beta\right)^{\prime}\right], \quad H_{\beta}=-\mathrm{E}\left[\ell_{\beta \beta}\left(U_{t-1}, U_{t}, \beta\right)\right] . \tag{2.4}
\end{gather*}
$$

Under mild regularity conditions, we have $\Omega_{\beta^{*}}=H_{\beta^{*}}$ for correctly specified copula models (see Section 3 ), but $\Omega_{\bar{\beta}} \neq H_{\bar{\beta}}$ for incorrectly specified copula models (see Section 4).

## 3. Estimation Under Correctly-Specified Copulas

We are interested in estimation and inference on the copula dependence parameter $\beta^{*}$.

### 3.1. Feasible estimation of copula parameter using filtered data $\widehat{Y}_{t}$

Let $\widehat{F}(\cdot)$ be a feasible estimator of the marginal distribution $F^{*}(\cdot)$ using the filtered data $\widehat{Y}_{t}$. We propose the following feasible copula estimator

$$
\begin{equation*}
\widehat{\beta}=\arg \max _{\beta} \widehat{Q}_{n}(\widehat{F}, \beta) \text {, where } \widehat{Q}_{n}(\widehat{F}, \beta)=\frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=2}^{n} \log c\left(\widehat{F}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t-1}\right), \widehat{F}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t}\right), \beta\right) \text {. } \tag{3.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

### 3.1.1. Parametric marginal case

We first consider the parametric case where the marginal distribution of $Y_{t}$ belongs to a parametric family. Denote the unknown true marginal density function and the distribution function of $Y_{t}$ by $f\left(\cdot, \alpha^{*}\right)$ and $F\left(\cdot, \alpha^{*}\right)$, where $\alpha$ is an $k_{1}$-dimensional vector of unknown parameters. We could then estimate the true marginal $F^{*}(\cdot)$ by $F(\cdot, \widehat{\alpha})$ where

$$
\begin{equation*}
\widehat{\alpha}=\arg \max _{\alpha} \sum_{t=1}^{n} \log f\left(\widehat{Y}_{t}, \alpha\right), \tag{3.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

and estimate the copula parameter $\beta^{*}$ by the following "parametric copula estimator":

$$
\widehat{\beta}_{P} \equiv \arg \max _{\beta} \widehat{Q}_{n}(\beta), \text { where } \widehat{Q}_{n}(\beta)=\frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=2}^{n} \log c\left(F\left(\widehat{Y}_{t-1}, \widehat{\alpha}\right), F\left(\widehat{Y}_{t}, \widehat{\alpha}\right), \beta\right) \text {. }
$$

### 3.1.2. Nonparametric marginal case

In practice, the exact form of marginal distribution is usually beyond our knowledge and thus the parametric model of marginal distribution may be misspecified. We now consider a semiparametric estimator where the marginal distribution is estimated nonparametrically based on the filtered time series $\widehat{Y}_{t}$. We use the so-called rescaled empirical distribution function (EDF) to estimate $F^{*}(\cdot)$ :

$$
\begin{equation*}
\widehat{F}_{n}(y) \equiv \frac{1}{n+1} \sum_{t=1}^{n} 1\left(\widehat{Y}_{t} \leq y\right) \tag{3.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

and estimate the copula parameter $\beta^{*}$ by the following "semiparametric copula estimator":

$$
\widehat{\beta}_{S P} \equiv \arg \max _{\beta} \widehat{\mathcal{L}}_{n}(\beta), \text { where } \widehat{\mathcal{L}}_{n}(\beta)=\frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=2}^{n} \log c\left(\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t-1}\right), \widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t}\right), \beta\right) .
$$

### 3.2. Infeasible estimation of copula parameter using $Y_{t}$

For comparison purpose, we review an infeasible estimator, $\widetilde{\beta}$, of $\beta^{*}$ assuming that $Y_{t}$ is observed. Let $\widetilde{F}(\cdot)$ be an infeasible estimator of the true marginal distribution $F^{*}(\cdot)$ using $Y_{t}$. Then a pseudo maximum likelihood estimator of $\beta^{*}$ using observed $Y_{t}$ is given by

$$
\widetilde{\beta}=\arg \max _{\beta} Q_{n}(\widetilde{F}, \beta) \text {, where } Q_{n}(\widetilde{F}, \beta)=\frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=2}^{n} \log c\left(\widetilde{F}\left(Y_{t-1}\right), \widetilde{F}\left(Y_{t}\right), \beta\right) \text {. }
$$

Again, $\widetilde{\beta}_{P}$ denotes the parametric copula estimator using the infeasible parametric marginal estimator: ${ }^{1}$

$$
\widetilde{F}=F(\cdot, \widetilde{\alpha}), \quad \widetilde{\alpha}=\arg \max _{\alpha} \sum_{t=1}^{n} \log f\left(Y_{t}, \alpha\right) .
$$

And $\widetilde{\beta}_{S P}$ denotes the semiparametric copula estimator using the infeasible rescaled estimator for $F^{*}(\cdot)$ :

$$
\begin{equation*}
\widetilde{F}(y)=F_{n}(y) \equiv \frac{1}{n+1} \sum_{t=1}^{n} 1\left(Y_{t} \leq y\right) . \tag{3.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

Chen and Fan (2006a) has proposed and studied the asymptotic properties of $\widetilde{\beta}_{S P}$ for first-order stationary Markov process $Y_{t}$.

In the next two subsections, we show that although the parameter estimators $\widehat{\beta}_{P}$ and $\widetilde{\beta}_{P}$ could have different asymptotic properties, the semiparametric copula estimators $\widehat{\beta}_{S P}$ and $\widetilde{\beta}_{S P}$ have the same asymptotic distribution.

### 3.3. Asymptotic properties of parametric copula estimator

In this subsection we establish the consistency and limiting distribution for the feasible parametric copula estimator. We introduce some additional notation for the parametric case. Let $g\left(Y_{t-1}, Y_{t}, \alpha, \beta\right)=$

[^1]$\log c\left(F\left(Y_{t-1}, \alpha\right), F\left(Y_{t}, \alpha\right), \beta\right)$ and $g_{\beta}\left(s_{1}, s_{2}, \alpha, \beta\right)=\partial g\left(s_{1}, s_{2}, \alpha, \beta\right) / \partial \beta$. For $i=1,2, j=1,2$, we define
\[

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{\partial g_{\beta}\left(s_{1}, s_{2}, \alpha, \beta\right)}{\partial \alpha} & =g_{\beta \alpha}\left(s_{1}, s_{2}, \alpha, \beta\right), \frac{\partial g_{\beta}\left(s_{1}, s_{2}, \alpha, \beta\right)}{\partial \beta}=g_{\beta \beta}\left(s_{1}, s_{2}, \alpha, \beta\right) \\
\frac{\partial g_{\beta}\left(s_{1}, s_{2}, \alpha, \beta\right)}{\partial s_{j}} & =g_{\beta j}\left(s_{1}, s_{2}, \alpha, \beta\right), \frac{\partial g_{\beta \beta}\left(s_{1}, s_{2}, \alpha, \beta\right)}{\partial s_{j}}=g_{\beta \beta j}\left(s_{1}, s_{2}, \alpha, \beta\right) \\
\frac{\partial g_{\beta \beta}\left(s_{1}, s_{2}, \alpha, \beta\right)}{\partial \alpha} & =g_{\beta \beta \alpha}\left(s_{1}, s_{2}, \alpha, \beta\right), \frac{\partial g_{\beta \alpha}\left(s_{1}, s_{2}, \alpha, \beta\right)}{\partial s_{j}}=g_{\beta \alpha j}\left(s_{1}, s_{2}, \alpha, \beta\right) \\
\frac{\partial g_{\beta i}\left(s_{1}, s_{2}, \alpha, \beta\right)}{\partial s_{j}} & =g_{\beta i j}\left(s_{1}, s_{2}, \alpha, \beta\right), \frac{\partial g_{\beta i}\left(s_{1}, s_{2}, \alpha, \beta\right)}{\partial \alpha}=g_{\beta i \alpha}\left(s_{1}, s_{2}, \alpha, \beta\right)
\end{aligned}
$$
\]

For consistency in the parametric case, we make the following assumptions.
Assumption ID1: (1) $\mathcal{A}$ and $\mathfrak{B}$ are compact subsets of $\mathcal{R}^{k_{1}}$ and $\mathcal{R}^{k}$. (2). $q(\alpha)=\mathrm{E}\left[\log f\left(Y_{t}, \alpha\right)\right]$ has a unique maximizer $\alpha^{*} \in \mathcal{A}$; and $Q(\beta)=\mathrm{E}\left[g\left(Y_{t-1}, Y_{t}, \alpha^{*}, \beta\right)\right]$ has a unique maximizer $\beta^{*} \in \mathfrak{B}$. (3) $f(y, \alpha)$ is continuous in $\alpha \in \mathcal{A}$, and $g(\alpha, \beta)=\mathrm{E}\left[g\left(Y_{t-1}, Y_{t}, \alpha, \beta\right)\right]$ is Lipschitz continuous in $\alpha \in \mathcal{A}$ and $\beta \in \mathfrak{B}$.
Assumption M1 (1) $\mathrm{E}\left[\sup _{\alpha}\left|\log f\left(Y_{t}, \alpha\right)\right|\right]<\infty$, and $\mathrm{E}\left[\sup _{\beta \in \mathfrak{B}, \alpha \in \mathcal{A}_{\delta}}\left|g\left(Y_{t-1}, Y_{t}, \alpha, \beta\right)\right|\right]<\infty$. (2) $f(y, \alpha)$ is uniformly continuous in $y$, uniformly over $\alpha \in \mathcal{A}$ (that is, for any $\epsilon>0$ there exists $\delta>0$, such that if $\left|y_{1}-y_{2}\right|<\delta$, then $\sup _{\alpha \in \mathcal{A}}\left|\log f\left(y_{1}, \alpha\right)-\log f\left(y_{2}, \alpha\right)\right|<\epsilon$.). Similarly, $g\left(s_{1}, s_{2}, \alpha, \beta\right)$ is uniformly continuous in ( $\left.s_{1}, s_{2}, \alpha\right)$, uniformly over $\beta \in \mathcal{B}$.
Theorem 1: Let Assumptions X, DGP, MX, ID1, and M1 hold. Then: $\widehat{\beta}_{P}=\beta^{*}+o_{p}(1)$.
We introduce additional notation and assumptions for the limiting distribution of $\widehat{\beta}_{P}$. Denote

$$
\Omega_{\alpha}=\mathrm{E}\left[\frac{\partial \log f\left(Y_{t}, \alpha^{*}\right)}{\partial \alpha} \frac{\partial \log f\left(Y_{t}, \alpha^{*}\right)}{\partial \alpha^{\prime}}\right], \quad H_{\alpha}=-\mathrm{E}\left[\frac{\partial^{2} \log f\left(Y_{t}, \alpha^{*}\right)}{\partial \alpha \partial \alpha^{\prime}}\right] .
$$

Assumption ID2: (1). $\beta^{*} \in \operatorname{int}(\mathfrak{B})$ and $\widehat{\beta}_{P}=\beta^{*}+o_{p}(1)$. (2) $g_{\beta}\left(s_{1}, s_{2}, \alpha, \beta\right)$ is Lipschitz continuous in $\beta, g_{\beta j}\left(s_{1}, s_{2}, \alpha, \beta\right)$ are continuous in $\left(s_{1}, s_{2}, \alpha, \beta\right) .(3) . \Omega_{\beta^{*}}=H_{\beta^{*}}$ given in (2.4) is positive definite. (4). $f\left(\cdot, \alpha^{*}\right)$ is differentiable in $\alpha^{*}$. (5) $\Omega_{\alpha}=H_{\alpha}$ is positive definite.

Assumption M2 (1) the derivatives of $g_{\beta}\left(s_{1}, s_{2}, \alpha, \beta\right)$ are uniformly continuous in $\left(s_{1}, s_{2}, \alpha, \beta\right)$. (2) the following limits hold in probability:

$$
\begin{aligned}
P_{n j}= & \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=2}^{n} g_{\beta j}\left(Y_{t-1}, Y_{t}, \alpha^{*}, \beta^{*}\right) X_{t-2+j}^{\prime} D_{n}^{-1} n^{1 / 2}=P_{j}+o_{p}(1), \quad j=1,2, \\
P_{n 3}= & n^{-1} \sum_{t=2}^{n} g_{\beta \alpha}\left(Y_{t-1}, Y_{t}, \alpha^{*}, \beta^{*}\right)=P_{3}+o_{p}(1) . \\
& H_{n \alpha Y}=\frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=1}^{n} \frac{\partial^{2} \log f\left(Y_{t}, \alpha^{*}\right)}{\partial \alpha \partial y}\left(X_{t}^{\prime} D_{n}^{-1} n^{1 / 2}\right)=H_{\alpha Y}+o_{p}(1) .
\end{aligned}
$$

Theorem 2: Let Assumptions X, DGP, MX, ID2 and M2 hold. Then:

$$
\sqrt{n}\left(\widehat{\beta}_{P}-\beta^{*}\right) \Rightarrow N\left(0, H_{\beta^{*}}^{-1} \Omega_{\beta}^{\#} H_{\beta^{*}}^{-1}\right)-H_{\beta^{*}}^{-1}\left(P_{1}+P_{2}+P_{3} \Omega_{\alpha}^{-1} H_{\alpha Y}\right) \xi
$$

where

$$
\Omega_{\beta}^{\#}=\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty} \operatorname{Var}\left(\frac{1}{\sqrt{n}} \sum_{t=2}^{n}\left(g_{\beta}\left(Y_{t-1}, Y_{t}, \alpha^{*}, \beta^{*}\right)+P_{3} \Omega_{\alpha}^{-1} \frac{\partial \log f\left(Y_{t}, \alpha^{*}\right)}{\partial \alpha}\right)\right) .
$$

Theorem 2 implies that, in the presence of nonstationarity, the limiting distribution of the parametric copula estimator $\widehat{\beta}_{P}$ may not be normal.

From the proof of Theorem 2, we can decompose the limiting distribution of $\widehat{\beta}_{P}$ into three components: The first part is $N\left(0, H_{\beta^{*}}^{-1} \Omega_{\beta^{*}} H_{\beta^{*}}^{-1}\right)=N\left(0, \Omega_{\beta^{*}}^{-1}\right)$, the normal limit of the ideal infeasible estimator when $Y_{t}$ is observed with a completely known marginal $F^{*}\left(Y_{t}\right)=F\left(Y_{t}, \alpha^{*}\right)$ (or a known $\left.\alpha^{*}\right)$; The second part is $N\left(0, H_{\beta^{*}}^{-1} P_{3} \Omega_{\alpha}^{-1} P_{3}^{\prime} H_{\beta^{*}}^{-1}\right)$, the normal limit from the parametric estimation of the marginal parameter $\alpha^{*}$ using $Y_{t}$; The third part is $H_{\beta^{*}}^{-1}\left(P_{1}+P_{2}+P_{3} \Omega_{\alpha}^{-1} H_{\alpha Y}\right) \xi$, the effect of nonstationary filtration $\widehat{Y}_{t}$. The first two parts are normal random variates but the third part may not be normal. Unless $P_{1}+P_{2}+P_{3} \Omega_{\alpha}^{-1} H_{\alpha Y}=o_{p}(1)$, the nonstationary filtration will affect the limiting distribution of $\widehat{\beta}_{P}$. In particular, the filtration affects the limiting distribution of $\sqrt{n}\left(\widehat{\beta}_{P}-\beta^{*}\right)$ directly through $\widehat{Y}_{t}$ and indirectly through $\widehat{\alpha}$. Unless $X_{t}$ is purely deterministic, the limiting distribution of $\sqrt{n}\left(\widehat{\beta}_{P}-\beta^{*}\right)$ is not normal and is generally affected by nuisance parameters in a complicated way. Remark 1. We define the ideal infeasible estimator $\breve{\beta}$ as the maximum likelihood estimator of $\beta^{*}$ assuming $Y_{t}$ is observed with a completely known marginal distribution $F^{*}(\cdot)$ :

$$
\begin{equation*}
\breve{\beta}=\arg \max _{\beta} Q_{n}\left(F^{*}, \beta\right) \text {, where } Q_{n}\left(F^{*}, \beta\right)=\frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=2}^{n} \log c\left(F^{*}\left(Y_{t-1}\right), F^{*}\left(Y_{t}\right), \beta\right) \text {. } \tag{3.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

It is obvious that

$$
\sqrt{n}\left(\breve{\beta}-\beta^{*}\right) \Rightarrow N\left(0, H_{\beta^{*}}^{-1} \Omega_{\beta^{*}} H_{\beta^{*}}^{-1}\right)=N\left(0, \Omega_{\beta^{*}}^{-1}\right) .
$$

From the proof of Theorem 2, we have

$$
\sqrt{n}\left(\widetilde{\beta}_{P}-\beta^{*}\right) \Rightarrow N\left(0, H_{\beta^{*}}^{-1} \Omega_{\beta}^{\#} H_{\beta^{*}}^{-1}\right) .
$$

Since $\Omega_{\beta}^{\#}-\Omega_{\beta^{*}}$ is positive definite, even assuming observable $Y_{t}$, there is still efficiency loss of the infeasible parametric copula estimator $\widetilde{\beta}_{P}$ using a consistent parametric estimator of marginal distribution $F^{*}()$. Nevertheless, according to Theorem 2, it is unclear which one, $\widetilde{\beta}_{P}$ vs $\widehat{\beta}_{P}$, is more efficient.

Example 1 (Continued). Trending Time Series. Let

$$
\begin{equation*}
\eta=\sum_{j=1}^{2} \mathrm{E} g_{\beta j}\left(Y_{t-1}, Y_{t}, \alpha^{*}, \beta^{*}\right)+P_{3} \Omega_{\alpha}^{-1} \mathrm{E}\left[\frac{\partial^{2} \log f\left(Y_{t}, \alpha^{*}\right)}{\partial \alpha \partial Y}\right], \tag{3.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\eta_{X}=\eta \int_{0}^{1} X(r)^{\prime} d r\left(\int_{0}^{1} X(r) X(r)^{\prime} d r\right)^{-1}
$$

Notice that

$$
\begin{aligned}
P_{n j} \rightarrow P_{j} & =\mathrm{E} g_{\beta j}\left(Y_{t-1}, Y_{t}, \alpha^{*}, \beta^{*}\right) \int_{0}^{1} X(r)^{\prime} d r, \quad j=1,2, \\
H_{n \alpha Y} & \rightarrow H_{\alpha Y}=\mathrm{E}\left[\frac{\partial^{2} \log f\left(Y_{t}, \alpha^{*}\right)}{\partial \alpha \partial Y}\right] \int_{0}^{1} X(r)^{\prime} d r,
\end{aligned}
$$

we have

$$
P_{1}+P_{2}+P_{3} \Omega_{\alpha}^{-1} H_{\alpha Y}=\eta \int_{0}^{1} X(r)^{\prime} d r
$$

and

$$
\sqrt{n}\left(\widehat{\beta}_{P}-\beta^{*}\right) \Rightarrow N\left(0, H_{\beta^{*}}^{-1} \bar{\Omega}_{\beta}^{\#} H_{\beta^{*}}^{-1}\right),
$$

where
$\bar{\Omega}_{\beta}^{\#}=\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty} \operatorname{Var}\left(\frac{1}{\sqrt{n}} \sum_{t=2}^{n} g_{\beta}\left(Y_{t-1}, Y_{t}, \alpha^{*}, \beta^{*}\right)+P_{n 3} \Omega_{\alpha}^{-1} \frac{1}{\sqrt{n}} \sum_{t=1}^{n} \frac{\partial \log f\left(Y_{t}, \alpha^{*}\right)}{\partial \alpha}-\eta_{X} \sum_{t} D_{n}^{-1} X_{t} Y_{t}\right)$.
In this example, the nonstationary component is deterministic and hence uncorrelated with $Y_{t}$, the limiting distribution of $D_{n}\left(\widehat{\pi}-\pi^{*}\right)$ is normal. Thus the limiting distribution of $\widehat{\beta}_{P}$ is normal, but is affected by the filtration as reflected in the formula of $\bar{\Omega}_{\beta}^{\#}$.

Example 2 (Continued). Unit Root. Let $Z_{t}=Z_{t-1}+Y_{t}$ is a unit root process. Then $X_{t}=Z_{t-1}$, $\pi^{*}=1$, and

$$
n\left(\widehat{\pi}-\pi^{*}\right) \Rightarrow \xi_{2}=\left[\int_{0}^{1} B_{Y}(r)^{2} d r\right]^{-1}\left[\int_{0}^{1} B_{Y}(r) d B_{Y}(r)+\sum_{h=1}^{\infty} E\left(Y_{1} Y_{1+h}\right)\right] .
$$

Then,

$$
\sqrt{n}\left(\widehat{\beta}_{P}-\beta^{*}\right) \Rightarrow N\left(0, H_{\beta^{*}}^{-1} \Omega_{\beta}^{\#} H_{\beta^{*}}^{-1}\right)-\eta H_{\beta^{*}}^{-1} h\left(B_{Y}(r)\right)
$$

where $\eta$ is defined as (3.6), and

$$
h\left(B_{Y}(r)\right)=\int_{0}^{1} B_{Y}(r) d r\left[\int_{0}^{1} B_{Y}(r)^{2} d r\right]^{-1}\left[\int_{0}^{1} B_{Y}(r) d B_{Y}(r)+\sum_{h=1}^{\infty} E\left(Y_{1} Y_{1+h}\right)\right] .
$$

In this example, the limiting distribution $\xi_{2}$ of the nonstationary filtration $\widehat{\pi}$ is non-normal, and thus the limiting distribution of $\widehat{\beta}_{P}$ is not normal and is affected by the filtration.

Example 3 (Continued). Cointegrated Time Series. $X_{t}=\left(X_{1 t}^{\prime}, X_{2 t}^{\prime}\right)^{\prime}$, where $X_{1 t}$ is a vector of deterministic trend, and $X_{2 t}$ is a vector of unit root process, then

$$
P_{n j} \rightarrow P_{j}=\mathrm{E} g_{\beta j}\left(Y_{t-1}, Y_{t}, \alpha^{*}, \beta^{*}\right)\left[\int_{0}^{1} X_{1}(r)^{\prime} d r, \int_{0}^{1} B_{2}(r)^{\prime} d r\right], j=1,2,
$$

and

$$
H_{n \alpha Y} \rightarrow H_{\alpha Y}=\mathrm{E}\left[\frac{\partial^{2} \log f\left(Y_{t}, \alpha^{*}\right)}{\partial \alpha \partial Y}\right] \int_{0}^{1} X(r)^{\prime} d r
$$

Then,

$$
\sqrt{n}\left(\widehat{\beta}_{P}-\beta^{*}\right) \Rightarrow N\left(0, H_{\beta^{*}}^{-1} \Omega_{\beta}^{\#} H_{\beta^{*}}^{-1}\right)-\eta H_{\beta^{*}}^{-1} h_{3}\left(X_{1}, B_{2}, B_{Y}\right)
$$

where

$$
\begin{aligned}
h_{3}\left(X_{1}, B_{2}, B_{Y}\right)= & {\left[\int_{0}^{1} X_{1}(r)^{\prime} d r, \int_{0}^{1} B_{2}(r)^{\prime} d r\right]\left[\left[\begin{array}{cc}
\int X_{1}(r) X_{1}(r)^{\prime} d r & \int X_{1}(r) B_{2}(r)^{\prime} d r \\
\int B_{2}(r) X_{1}(r)^{\prime} d r & \int B_{2}(r) B_{2}(r)^{\prime} d r
\end{array}\right]\right]^{-1} } \\
& \times\left[\begin{array}{c}
\int_{0}^{1} X_{1}(r) d B_{Y}(r) \\
\int_{0}^{1} B_{2}(r) d B_{Y}(r)+\Lambda_{2 Y}
\end{array}\right]
\end{aligned}
$$

In this example, the stochastic nonstationary process $X_{2 t}$ is correlated with $Y_{t}$, and the limiting distribution $\xi_{3}$ of the nonstationary filtration $\widehat{\pi}$ is non-normal. Thus the limiting distribution of $\widehat{\beta}_{P}$ is not normal and is affected by the filtration.

### 3.4. Asymptotic properties of semiparametric copula estimator

We first establish a key Lemma for a weighted empirical process that is of independent interest to handle filtration for time series. Lemma 1 below is about the empirical distribution functions based on filtered data, and has nothing to do with copula models.
Assumption SP: (1) There exists $\bar{Y}$, for $|y|>\bar{Y}$, and any sequence $\delta_{n}=o(1),\left|F^{*}\left(y+\delta_{n}\right)-F^{*}(y)\right| \leq$ $F^{*}(y) \delta_{n}$. (2) $w(\cdot)$ is a continuous function on $[0,1]$ which is strictly positive on $(0,1)$, symmetric at $u=0.5$, and increasing on $(0,1 / 2]$, satisfying $w(u) \geq \zeta[u(1-u)]^{\mu} \log (1 /(u(1-u)))^{\mu_{1}}$ with $\zeta>0$, $\mu_{1}>0, \mu<1 / 2 q$ for $q$ given in Assumption MX.

Let $b=\left(b_{1}, \cdots, b_{n}\right)^{\prime}$ and $|b|=\max _{1 \leq t \leq n}\left|b_{t}\right|$. Denote

$$
\mathcal{Z}_{n}(y, b) \equiv \frac{1}{\sqrt{n+1}} \sum_{t=1}^{n}\left[1\left(Y_{t} \leq y+n^{-1 / 2} b_{t}\right)-F^{*}\left(y+n^{-1 / 2} b_{t}\right)\right]
$$

Lemma 1: Let Assumptions X, $\operatorname{DGP}(1), \mathrm{MX}$ and SP hold. Then: for any given $B>0$,

$$
\sup _{|b| \leq B} \sup _{y}\left|\frac{\mathcal{Z}_{n}(y, b)-\mathcal{Z}_{n}(y, 0)}{w\left(F^{*}(y)\right)}\right|=o_{p}(1)
$$

Let $\mathcal{F}$ denote the space of probability distributions over the support of $Y_{t}$, and $w(\cdot)$ be a positive weighting function as given in Assumption $\operatorname{SP}(2)$. For any $F \in \mathcal{F}$ we define a weighted metric $\|\cdot\|_{w}$ as

$$
\left\|F-F^{*}\right\|_{w}=\sup _{y}\left|\left\{F(y)-F^{*}(y)\right\} / w\left(F^{*}(y)\right)\right|
$$

For a small $\delta>0$, let $\mathcal{F}_{\delta}=\left\{F \in \mathcal{F}:\left\|F-F^{*}\right\|_{w} \leq \delta\right\}$. Then for $F_{n}(\cdot)$ given in (3.4) we have $F_{n} \in \mathcal{F}_{\delta}$ a.s. (by Chen and Fan (2006a) lemma 4.1(1)).

The following conditions are imposed for the consistency of the semiparametric copula estimator.
Assumption ID3: (1). $\mathfrak{B}$ is a compact subset of $\mathcal{R}^{k}, \mathrm{E}\left[\ell_{\beta}\left(F^{*}\left(Y_{t-1}\right), F^{*}\left(Y_{t}\right), \beta\right)\right]=0$ if and only if $\beta=\beta^{*} \in \mathfrak{B}$. (2) $\ell_{\beta}\left(s_{1}, s_{2}, \beta\right)$ is Lipschitz continuous in $\beta, \ell_{\beta j}\left(s_{1}, s_{2}, \beta\right)$ are continuous in $\left(s_{1}, s_{2}, \beta\right)$.
Assumption M3: (1). $\mathrm{E}\left[\sup _{\beta \in \mathfrak{B}}\left\|\ell_{\beta}\left(F^{*}\left(Y_{t-1}\right), F^{*}\left(Y_{t}\right), \beta\right)\right\| \log \left(1+\left\|\ell_{\beta}\left(F^{*}\left(Y_{t-1}\right), F^{*}\left(Y_{t}\right), \beta\right)\right\|\right)\right]<\infty$. (2). $\mathrm{E}\left[\sup _{\beta \in \mathfrak{B}, F \in \mathcal{F}_{\delta}}\left\|\ell_{\beta j}\left(F\left(Y_{t-1}\right), F\left(Y_{t}\right), \beta\right)\right\| w\left(F^{*}\left(Y_{t-2+j}\right)\right)\right]<\infty, j=1,2$.
(3). $\sup _{y}\left|f^{*}(y) / w\left(F^{*}(y)\right)\right|<\infty$.

We note that Assumptions ID3 and M3(1)(2) are already imposed in Chen and Fan (2006a) for the consistency of the infeasible semiparametric estimator $\widetilde{\beta}_{S P}$ using $\left\{Y_{t}\right\}$. We impose Assumption $\mathrm{M} 3(3)$ since $\widehat{\beta}_{S P}$ is computed using the filtered data $\left\{\widehat{Y}_{t}\right\}$.
Theorem 3: Let Assumptions X, DGP, MX, SP, ID3 and M3 hold. Then: $\widehat{\beta}_{S P}=\beta^{*}+o_{p}(1)$.
Recall that under Assumption $\operatorname{DGP}(1),\left\{U_{t}=F^{*}\left(Y_{t}\right)\right\}_{t=1}^{n}$ is a first-order Markov with $c^{*}\left(v_{1}, v_{2}\right)$ as the true joint density of $\left(U_{t-1}, U_{t}\right)$. Denote

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{G}_{n}(\beta)=\frac{1}{\sqrt{n}} \sum_{t=2}^{n}\left\{\ell_{\beta}\left(U_{t-1}, U_{t}, \beta\right)+G_{0}\left(U_{t}, \beta\right)+G_{1}\left(U_{t-1}, \beta\right)\right\}, \tag{3.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

where, for $j=0,1$,

$$
\begin{align*}
G_{j}\left(U_{t-j}, \beta\right) & =\int_{0}^{1} \int_{0}^{1} \ell_{\beta, 2-j}\left(v_{1}, v_{2} ; \beta\right)\left[1\left(U_{t-j} \leq v_{2-j}\right)-v_{2-j}\right] c^{*}\left(v_{1}, v_{2}\right) d v_{1} d v_{2}  \tag{3.8}\\
& =\mathrm{E}\left\{\ell_{\beta, 2-j}\left(U_{1}, U_{2} ; \beta\right)\left[1\left(U_{t-j} \leq U_{2-j}\right)-U_{2-j}\right] \mid U_{t-j}\right\} \tag{3.9}
\end{align*}
$$

Let

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Omega_{\beta}^{+}=\Omega^{+}(\beta)=\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty} \operatorname{Var}\left(\mathcal{G}_{n}(\beta)\right) . \tag{3.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

The following additional assumptions are used for the asymptotic normality of $\widehat{\beta}_{S P}$.
Assumption ID4: (1). Assumption ID3(1) is satisfied with $\beta^{*} \in \operatorname{int}(\mathfrak{B}), \widehat{\beta}_{S P}=\beta^{*}+o_{p}(1)$. (2) $H_{\beta^{*}}$ given in (2.4) and $\Omega_{\beta^{*}}^{+}$given in (3.10) are positive definite. (3). $\sup _{y}\left|\left(F_{n}(y)-F^{*}(y)\right) / w\left(F^{*}(y)\right)\right|=$ $O_{p}\left(n^{-1 / 2}\right)$.
Assumption M4 (1). Let $F_{\eta}=F^{*}+\eta\left[F-F^{*}\right]$ for $\eta \in[0,1]$ and $F \in \mathcal{F}_{\delta}$, the interchange of differentiation and integration of $\ell_{\beta}\left(F_{\eta}\left(Y_{t-1}\right), F_{\eta}\left(Y_{t}\right), \beta_{\eta}\right)$ w.r.t $\eta \in(0,1)$ is valid.
(2) $\mathrm{E}\left[\sup _{\left\|\beta-\beta^{*}\right\| \leq \delta, F \in \mathcal{F}_{\delta}}\left\|\ell_{\beta}\left(F\left(Y_{t-1}\right), F\left(Y_{t}\right), \beta\right)\right\|^{2} \log \left(1+\left\|\ell_{\beta}\left(F\left(Y_{t-1}\right), F\left(Y_{t}\right), \beta\right)\right\|\right)\right]<\infty$,
$\mathrm{E}\left[\sup _{\left\|\beta-\beta^{*}\right\| \leq \delta, F \in \mathcal{F}_{\delta}}\left\|\ell_{\beta \beta}\left(F\left(Y_{t-1}\right), F\left(Y_{t}\right), \beta\right)\right\|^{2}\right]<\infty$,
$\mathrm{E}\left[\sup _{\left\|\beta-\beta^{*}\right\| \leq \delta, F \in \mathcal{F}_{\delta}}\left\|\ell_{\beta j}\left(F\left(Y_{t-1}\right), F\left(Y_{t}\right), \beta\right)\right\| w\left(F^{*}\left(Y_{t-2+j}\right)\right)\right]^{2}<\infty, j=1,2$.
(3). $\mathrm{E}\left[\sup _{\left\|\beta-\beta^{*}\right\| \leq \delta, F \in \mathcal{F}_{\delta}}\left|\ell_{\beta i j}\left(F\left(Y_{t-1}\right), F\left(Y_{t}\right), \beta\right) w\left(F^{*}\left(Y_{t+i-2}\right)\right) w\left(F^{*}\left(Y_{t+j-2}\right)\right)\right|\right]<\infty, i, j=1,2$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \mathrm{E}\left[\sup _{\left\|\beta-\beta^{*}\right\| \leq \delta, F \in \mathcal{F}_{\delta}}\left\|\ell_{\beta \beta j}\left(F\left(Y_{t-1}\right), F\left(Y_{t}\right), \beta\right) w\left(F^{*}\left(Y_{t+j-2}\right)\right)\right\|\right]<\infty, i, j=1,2 . \\
& \mathrm{E}\left[\sup _{\left\|\beta-\beta^{*}\right\| \leq \delta, F \in \mathcal{F}_{\delta}}\left\|\ell_{\beta \beta \beta}\left(F\left(Y_{t-1}\right), F\left(Y_{t}\right), \beta\right)\right\|\right]<\infty .
\end{aligned}
$$

We note that Assumptions ID4 and M4(1)(2) are already imposed in Chen and Fan (2006a) for the asymptotic normality of the infeasible semiparametric estimator $\widetilde{\beta}_{S P}$ using $\left\{Y_{t}\right\}$. We impose Assumption M4(3) since $\widehat{\beta}_{S P}$ is computed using the filtered data $\left\{\widehat{Y}_{t}\right\}$.
Theorem 4: Let Assumptions X, DGP, MX, SP, ID4 and M4 hold. Then:

$$
\sqrt{n}\left(\widehat{\beta}_{S P}-\beta^{*}\right)=\sqrt{n}\left(\widetilde{\beta}_{S P}-\beta^{*}\right)+o_{p}(1)=H_{\beta^{*}}^{-1} \mathcal{G}_{n}\left(\beta^{*}\right)+o_{p}(1) \Rightarrow N\left(0, H_{\beta^{*}}^{-1} \Omega_{\beta^{*}}^{+} H_{\beta^{*}}^{-1}\right) .
$$

Theorem 4 shows that the nonstationary filtration does not affect the limiting distribution of the semiparametric copula estimator $\widehat{\beta}_{S P}$, which is the same as that of the infeasible semiparametric copula estimator $\widetilde{\beta}_{S P}$ using $Y_{t}$.

From the proof of Theorem 4, we can again decompose the limiting distribution of the semiparametric copula estimator $\widehat{\beta}_{S P}$ into three components: The first part is $N\left(0, H_{\beta^{*}}^{-1} \Omega_{\beta^{*}} H_{\beta^{*}}^{-1}\right)=N\left(0, \Omega_{\beta^{*}}\right)$, the normal limit of the ideal infeasible estimator $\breve{\beta}$ when $Y_{t}$ is observed with a completely known marginal distribution $F^{*}(\cdot)$; The second part, denoted as $A_{n 2}+A_{n 4}$ in the Appendix, is from the nonparametric estimation of the unknown marginal distribution using $Y_{t}$, and is also asymptotically normal; The third part, denoted as $A_{n 1}+A_{n 3}$ in the Appendix, is the effect of nonstationary filtration $\widehat{Y}_{t}$. We show in the Appendix that $A_{n 1}+A_{n 3}=o_{p}(1)$. Therefore, the distribution of $\sqrt{n}\left(\widehat{\beta}_{S P}-\beta^{*}\right)$ is only asymptotically affected by the first two parts. Consequently, the limiting distribution of $\sqrt{n}\left(\widehat{\beta}_{S P}-\beta^{*}\right)$ is the same as that of $\sqrt{n}\left(\widetilde{\beta}_{S P}-\beta^{*}\right)$, which is always normal.

Remark 2. Chen and Fan (2006b) studied semiparametric copula-based multivariate dynamic models

$$
\begin{aligned}
Z_{t} & =\left(Z_{1, t}, \ldots, Z_{d, t}\right), \quad Z_{j, t}=\mu_{j, t}\left(\theta^{*}\right)+\sigma_{j, t}\left(\theta^{*}\right) Y_{j, t}, \\
\mu_{j, t}\left(\theta^{*}\right) & =E\left[Z_{j, t} \mid \mathcal{I}_{t-1}\right], \quad \sigma_{j, t}^{2}\left(\theta^{*}\right)=\operatorname{Var}\left[Z_{j, t} \mid \mathcal{I}_{t-1}\right], \\
Y_{t} & =\left(Y_{1, t}, \ldots, Y_{d, t}\right) \quad \text { is independent of } \mathcal{I}_{t-1}, \quad \text { and }\left\{Y_{t}\right\}_{t=1}^{n} \text { is i.i.d. over } t
\end{aligned}
$$

where the joint distribution of the multivariate standardized innovation $Y_{t}=\left(Y_{1, t}, \ldots, Y_{d, t}\right)$ has the concurrent copula density $c\left(F_{1}\left(Y_{1, t}\right), \ldots, F_{d}\left(Y_{d, t}\right) ; \beta\right)$ that links marginal distributions $F_{j}\left(Y_{j, t}\right), j=1, \ldots, d$ of individual standardized innovation at the same time period $t$. Chen and Fan (2006b) established that the asymptotic distribution of the semiparametric (two-step) copula parameter estimator using the filtered standardized innovation $\widehat{Y}_{t}$ is the same as that based on true multivariate standardized innovation $Y_{t}$, and hence is not affected by the parametric estimation of the conditional mean and volatility parameters $\theta^{*}$. Recently Chen, Huang and Yi (2020) extend this result to nonparametric estimated $\left(E\left[Z_{j, t} \mid \mathcal{I}_{t-1}\right], \operatorname{Var}\left[Z_{j, t} \mid \mathcal{I}_{t-1}\right]\right)_{j=1}^{d}$. We should stress that the results in Chen and Fan (2006b)
and Chen, Huang and Yi (2020) crucially depend on the independence between $Y_{t}=\left(Y_{1, t}, \ldots, Y_{d, t}\right)$ and the dynamic part $\mathcal{I}_{t-1}$ of the observed time series $Z_{t}$. However, in the presence of stochastic nonstationarity (unit-root or cointegration) as in our paper, $X_{t}$ can be correlated with the residual term $Y_{t}$, and hence our Theorem 4 can not be explained by their results.

Remark 3. Under Assumption $\operatorname{DGP}(2),\left\{U_{t}=F^{*}\left(Y_{t}\right)\right\}_{t=1}^{n}$ is a first-order Markov with $c^{*}\left(v_{1}, v_{2}\right)=$ $c\left(v_{1}, v_{2} ; \beta^{*}\right)$ as the true joint density of $\left(U_{t-1}, U_{t}\right)$. Hence we can simulate a first-order Markov $\left\{\widetilde{U}_{t}\right\}$ from $c\left(v_{1}, v_{2} ; \widehat{\beta}_{S P}\right)$ (see Chen and Fan 2006a, Chen, Koenker and Xiao 2009), and a parametric bootstrap approach can be used for inference on copula dependence parameter $\beta^{*}$. For instance, we could compute a consistent long-run variance estimator for $\widehat{\beta}_{S P}$ using $\widetilde{H}_{\beta}^{-1} \widetilde{\Omega}_{\beta}^{+} \widetilde{H}_{\beta}^{-1}$, where $\widetilde{H}_{\beta}=$ $-\frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=2}^{n} \ell_{\beta \beta}\left(\widetilde{U}_{t-1}, \widetilde{U}_{t}, \widehat{\beta}_{S P}\right)$ and

$$
\widetilde{\Omega}_{\beta}^{+}=\sum_{h=-M}^{M} K\left(\frac{h}{M}\right) \widetilde{\gamma}_{n}(h), \quad \widetilde{\gamma}_{n}(h)=\frac{1}{n} \sum_{\substack{t=2 \\ 2 \leq t, t+h \leq n}}^{n} \widetilde{S}_{t}\left(\widehat{\beta}_{S P}\right) \widetilde{S}_{t+h}\left(\widehat{\beta}_{S P}\right)^{\prime},
$$

where the kernel $K()$ and the bandwidth $M$ are given in Assumption $K B$ below, and

$$
\begin{aligned}
\widetilde{S}_{t}\left(\widehat{\beta}_{S P}\right) & =\ell_{\beta}\left(\widetilde{U}_{t-1}, \widetilde{U}_{t}, \widehat{\beta}_{S P}\right)+\widehat{G}_{0}\left(\widetilde{U}_{t}\right)+\widehat{G}_{1}\left(\widetilde{U}_{t-1}\right), \\
\widehat{G}_{j}\left(\widetilde{U}_{t-j}\right) & =\int_{0}^{1} \int_{0}^{1} \ell_{\beta, 2-j}\left(v_{1}, v_{2} ; \widehat{\beta}_{S P}\right)\left[1\left(\widetilde{U}_{t-j} \leq v_{2-j}\right)-v_{2-j}\right] c\left(v_{1}, v_{2} ; \widehat{\beta}_{S P}\right) d v_{1} d v_{2}
\end{aligned}
$$

Nevertheless, for the sake of robustness to the potential misspecification of copula models, we recommend an alternative long-run variance estimator given in Theorem 7 below.

## 4. Semiparametric Estimation Under Copula-Misspecification

Section 3 considers the case where the residual copula function is correctly specified. In empirical work, as illustrated in Section 6 below, one may select a parametric copula family to capture the tail dependence by eye spotting a simple scatter plot of $\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t}\right)$ against $\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t-1}\right)$. However, there are still several parametric copula families that can generate similar tail dependence patterns, and any parametric specification might be potentially misspecified. For this reason, we study semiparametric estimation and residual copula model selection tests in the presence of misspecified residual copula models, without any parametric specification of marginal distribution $F^{*}$ of the residual process $\left\{Y_{t}\right\}$.

### 4.1. Semiparametric two-step estimation of pseudo-true copula parameters

Suppose that the true copula function that captures the dependence in $Y_{t}$ is given by $C^{*}(u, v)$, but we consider a copula function $C(u, v, \beta)$ and estimate $\beta$ by $\widehat{\beta}_{S P}$ which maximizes

$$
\widehat{\mathcal{L}}_{n}(\beta)=\frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=2}^{n} \log c\left(\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t-1}\right), \widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t}\right), \beta\right), \quad \text { with } \widehat{F}_{n}(\cdot) \text { given in (3.3). }
$$

The infeasible semiparametric estimator based on unobserved $Y_{t}$ maximize

$$
\mathcal{L}_{n}(\beta)=\frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=2}^{n} \log c\left(F_{n}\left(Y_{t-1}\right), F_{n}\left(Y_{t}\right), \beta\right), \quad \text { with } F_{n}(\cdot) \text { given in (3.4). }
$$

Under appropriate assumptions, the maximizer of $\mathcal{L}_{n}(\beta)$ will converge to the pseudo-true value $\bar{\beta}$ defined in (2.3).

We make the following assumptions, which are parallel to the assumptions in Section 3.4, but modified to accommodate the misspecified copula model.

Assumption ID5: Assumption ID3 holds with $\beta^{*}$ replaced by the pseudo-true value $\bar{\beta} \in \mathfrak{B}$ defined in (2.3).

Theorem 5. Let Assumptions X, DGP(1), MX, SP, ID5 and M3 hold. Then: $\widehat{\beta}_{S P}=\bar{\beta}+o_{p}(1)$.
Assumption ID6: Assumption ID4 holds with $\beta^{*}$ replaced by $\bar{\beta} \in \operatorname{int}(\mathfrak{B})$.
Assumption M6: Assumption M4 holds with $\beta^{*}$ replaced by $\bar{\beta}$.
Let $\Omega_{\bar{\beta}}^{+}=\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty} \operatorname{Var}\left(\mathcal{G}_{n}(\bar{\beta})\right)$ where $\mathcal{G}_{n}(\bar{\beta})$ is defined as in (3.7).
Theorem 6. Let Assumptions X, DGP(1), MX, SP, ID6 and M6 hold. Then:

$$
\sqrt{n}\left(\widehat{\beta}_{S P}-\bar{\beta}\right)=\sqrt{n}\left(\widetilde{\beta}_{S P}-\bar{\beta}\right)+o_{p}(1)=H_{\bar{\beta}}^{-1} \mathcal{G}_{n}(\bar{\beta})+o_{p}(1) \Rightarrow N\left(0, H_{\bar{\beta}}^{-1} \Omega_{\bar{\beta}}^{+} H_{\bar{\beta}}^{-1}\right) .
$$

Theorem 6 shows that, even for a misspecified residual copula model, the nonstationary filtration still does not affect the limiting distribution of the semiparametric copula estimator $\widehat{\beta}_{S P}$ (centered at the pseudo-true parameter $\bar{\beta}$ ), which is again normal, the same as that of the infeasible semiparametric copula estimator $\widetilde{\beta}_{S P}$ using $Y_{t}$, under a misspecified copula model.

Similar to Theorem 2 for the correctly specified case, the limiting distribution of parametric copula estimators based on filtered time series under copula misspecification are again affected by the preliminary filtration, and may not be asymptotic normal in the presence of a nonstationary component.

### 4.2. Semiparametric inference on copula parameters

The simple and robust asymptotic properties of the semiparametric (two-step) copula estimator greatly simplify all kinds of statistical inferences on copula models for latent $\left\{Y_{t}\right\}$. In this section, we briefly mention the Wald test for restrictions on the copula dependence parameters $\beta$ using the asymptotic results of Theorem 6 for possibly misspecified copula models. Notice that Theorem 6 becomes Theorem 4 under $\operatorname{DGP}(2)$ (correctly specified copula model, i.e., $\bar{\beta}=\beta^{*}$ ).

Consider the general linear restriction $\mathrm{H}_{01}: R \bar{\beta}=r$. A leading example is the significance test for a scalar element $\beta_{j}$ of $\beta: \mathrm{H}_{02}: \bar{\beta}_{j}=\beta_{0 j}$. Notice that under the null $\mathrm{H}_{01}$ and Assumptions for Theorem 7 ,

$$
\sqrt{n}\left(R \widehat{\beta}_{S P}-r\right) \Rightarrow N\left(0, R H_{\bar{\beta}}^{-1} \Omega_{\bar{\beta}}^{+} H_{\bar{\beta}}^{-1} R^{\prime}\right) .
$$

Thus, under $H_{01}$, as $n \rightarrow \infty$,

$$
n\left(R \widehat{\beta}_{S P}-r\right)^{\prime}\left[R H_{\bar{\beta}}^{-1} \Omega_{\bar{\beta}}^{+} H_{\bar{\beta}}^{-1} R^{\prime}\right]^{-1}\left(R \widehat{\beta}_{S P}-r\right) \Rightarrow \chi_{d_{r}}^{2},
$$

where $d_{r}$ is the number of linearly independent restrictions.
Let $\widehat{H}_{\beta}$ and $\widehat{\Omega}_{\beta}^{+}$be any consistent estimators of $H_{\bar{\beta}}$ and $\Omega_{\bar{\beta}}^{+}$respectively. Then we can compute a simple Wald test statistic as

$$
\widehat{W}_{n}=n\left(R \widehat{\beta}_{S P}-r\right)^{\prime}\left[R \widehat{H}_{\beta}^{-1} \widehat{\Omega}_{\beta}^{+} \widehat{H}_{\beta}^{-1} R^{\prime}\right]^{-1}\left(R \widehat{\beta}_{S P}-r\right) .
$$

We may estimate $H_{\bar{\beta}}$ by the sample analog:

$$
\widehat{H}_{\beta}=-\frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=2}^{n} \ell_{\beta \beta}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t-1}\right), \widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t}\right), \widehat{\beta}_{S P}\right),
$$

and estimate $\Omega_{\bar{\beta}}^{ \pm}$by a nonparametric kernel estimator (see, e.g., Newey and West (1987), Andrews (1991)):

$$
\widehat{\Omega}_{\beta}^{+}=\sum_{h=-M}^{M} K\left(\frac{h}{M}\right) \widehat{\gamma}_{n}(h), \quad \widehat{\gamma}_{n}(h)=\frac{1}{n} \sum_{\substack{t=2 \\ 2 \leq t+h \leq n}}^{n} S_{t}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}, \widehat{\beta}_{S P}\right)\left[S_{t+h}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}, \widehat{\beta}_{S P}\right)\right]^{\prime}
$$

where

$$
\begin{aligned}
S_{t}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}, \widehat{\beta}_{S P}\right) & =\ell_{\beta}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t-1}\right), \widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t}\right), \widehat{\beta}_{S P}\right)+\widehat{G}_{0}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t}\right)\right)+\widehat{G}_{1}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t-1}\right)\right) \\
\widehat{G}_{j}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t-j}\right)\right) & =\frac{1}{n} \sum_{l=2}^{n} \ell_{\beta, 2-j}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{l-1}\right), \widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{l}\right), \widehat{\beta}_{S P}\right)\left[1\left(\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t-j}\right) \leq \widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{l-j}\right)\right)-\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{l-j}\right)\right] .
\end{aligned}
$$

We assume the following extra condition for the consistency of covariance estimator for $\Omega_{\bar{\beta}}^{+}$.
Assumption KB: (1). $K(\cdot)$ is a real valued function defined on $[-1,1]$ with $K(0)=1, K(-u)=$ $K(u)$, and $\int K(u)^{2} d u<\infty . K$ is continuous at 0 and all but finite number of other points. (2). $M \rightarrow \infty$ and $M=o\left(n^{1 / 4}\right)$ as $n \rightarrow \infty$. (3). $\mathrm{E}\left[\sup _{\|\beta-\bar{\beta}\| \leq \delta, F \in \mathcal{F}_{\delta}}\left\|\ell_{\beta}\left(F\left(Y_{t-1}\right), F\left(Y_{t}\right), \beta\right)\right\|^{4+\epsilon}\right]<\infty$, $\mathrm{E}\left[\sup _{\|\beta-\bar{\beta}\| \leq \delta, F \in \mathcal{F}_{\delta}}\left\|\ell_{\beta j}\left(F\left(Y_{t-1}\right), F\left(Y_{t}\right), \beta\right)\right\| w\left(F^{*}\left(Y_{t-2+j}\right)\right)\right]^{4+\epsilon}<\infty, j=1,2$, for small $\delta>0$ and $\epsilon>0$.

Theorem 7: Let Assumptions X, DGP(1), MX, SP, ID6, M6 and KB hold. Then: (1) $\widehat{\Omega}_{\beta}^{+}=$ $\Omega_{\bar{\beta}}^{+}+o_{p}(1)$. (2) Under $H_{01}, \widehat{W}_{n} \Rightarrow \chi_{d_{r}}^{2}$ where $d_{r}$ is the number of linearly independent restrictions.

### 4.3. Semiparametric inference on copula model selection

In practice, there might be more than one copula functions that can generate similar temporal (and tail) dependence in the fitted residuals, and we want to select a copula function among candidate copula functions. We next consider residual copula model selection test based on Theorem 7 for potentially misspecified copula models.

Consider two candidate classes of parametric copula models: $\left\{C_{j}\left(u_{1}, u_{2}, \beta_{j}\right): \beta_{j} \in \mathfrak{B}_{j} \subset \mathcal{R}^{d_{j}}\right\}$, $j=1,2$. We are interested in selecting a copula model from these two candidates. Corresponding to the $j$-th copula model, the conditional log likelihood of $Y_{t}$ given $Y_{t-1}$ is given by

$$
\log f^{*}\left(y_{t}\right)+\log c_{j}\left(F^{*}\left(y_{t-1}\right), F^{*}\left(y_{t}\right), \beta_{j}\right) .
$$

Notice that the first term $\log f^{*}\left(y_{t}\right)$ does not depend on the copula, we may consider the following log-likelihood-ratio:

$$
L R=\mathrm{E}\left[\log \frac{c_{2}\left(F^{*}\left(Y_{t-1}\right), F^{*}\left(Y_{t}\right), \beta_{2}\right)}{c_{1}\left(F^{*}\left(Y_{t-1}\right), F^{*}\left(Y_{t}\right), \beta_{1}\right)}\right] .
$$

If we consider the hypothesis $\mathrm{H}_{0}$ : Copula model $C_{1}\left(u_{1}, u_{2}, \beta_{1}\right)$ is not worse than copula model $C_{2}\left(u_{1}, u_{2}, \beta_{2}\right)$; vs. $\mathrm{H}_{1}$ : Copula model $C_{1}\left(u_{1}, u_{2}, \beta_{1}\right)$ is worse than copula model $C_{2}\left(u_{1}, u_{2}, \beta_{2}\right)$. Then: $L R \leq 0$ under $\mathrm{H}_{0}$, and $L R>0$ under $\mathrm{H}_{1}$. In practice, neither $F$ nor $Y_{t}$ are observed, and have to be replaced by appropriate estimates. We construct the following pseudo log-likelihood-ratio (PLR) statistic:

$$
\widehat{L R}_{n}=\frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=2}^{n} \log \frac{c_{2}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t-1}\right), \widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t}\right), \widehat{\beta}_{2}\right)}{c_{1}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t-1}\right), \widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t}\right), \widehat{\beta}_{1}\right)}, \quad \text { with } \widehat{F}_{n}(\cdot) \text { given in (3.3), }
$$

where $\widehat{\beta}_{j}(j=1,2$.$) is the semiparametric estimator \widehat{\beta}_{S P}$ for copula model $j$ using the filtered time series $\left\{\widehat{Y}_{t}\right\}_{t=1}^{n}$ and $\widehat{F}_{n}(\cdot)$. For convenience of asymptotic analysis, we introduce an infeasible PLR statistic $L R_{n}$ using unobserved $\left\{Y_{t}\right\}_{t=1}^{n}$ :

$$
L R_{n}=\frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=2}^{n} \log \frac{c_{2}\left(F_{n}\left(Y_{t-1}\right), F_{n}\left(Y_{t}\right), \widetilde{\beta}_{2}\right)}{c_{1}\left(F_{n}\left(Y_{t-1}\right), F_{n}\left(Y_{t}\right), \widetilde{\beta}_{1}\right)}, \quad \text { with } F_{n}(\cdot) \text { given in (3.4), }
$$

where $\widetilde{\beta}_{j}\left(j=1,2\right.$. ) is the infeasible semiparametric estimator $\widetilde{\beta}_{S P}$ for copula model $j$ using $\left\{Y_{t}\right\}_{t=1}^{n}$ and $F_{n}(\cdot)$.

The following theorem shows that the PLR statistic $\widehat{L R}_{n}$ is asymptotically equivalent to the infeasible PLR test $L R_{n}$.

Theorem 8: Let Assumptions X, DGP(1), MX, SP, ID6 and M6 hold for two candidate copula models $j=1,2$, with $\bar{\beta}_{j} \in \mathfrak{B}_{j}$ the pseudo-true copula parameter values.
(1) If $\operatorname{Pr}\left\{\left(Y_{1}, Y_{2}\right): c_{1}\left(F^{*}\left(Y_{1}\right), F^{*}\left(Y_{2}\right), \bar{\beta}_{1}\right) \neq c_{2}\left(F^{*}\left(Y_{1}\right), F^{*}\left(Y_{2}\right), \bar{\beta}_{2}\right)\right\}>0$ (generalized non-nested case), then: $\sqrt{n}\left(\widehat{L R}_{n}-L R_{n}\right)=o_{p}(1)$, and hence

$$
\sqrt{n}\left(\widehat{L R}_{n}-\mathrm{E}\left[\log \frac{c_{2}\left(U_{t-1}, U_{t}, \bar{\beta}_{2}\right)}{c_{1}\left(U_{t-1}, U_{t}, \bar{\beta}_{1}\right)}\right]\right) \Rightarrow N\left(0, \omega^{2}\right), \quad \text { with } \omega^{2} \text { given in (4.1). }
$$

(2) If $\operatorname{Pr}\left\{\left(Y_{1}, Y_{2}\right): c_{1}\left(F^{*}\left(Y_{1}\right), F^{*}\left(Y_{2}\right), \bar{\beta}_{1}\right)=c_{2}\left(F^{*}\left(Y_{1}\right), F^{*}\left(Y_{2}\right), \bar{\beta}_{2}\right)\right\}=1$ (generalized nested case), then: $n\left(\widehat{L R}_{n}-L R_{n}\right)=o_{p}(1)$, and hence

$$
2 n \widehat{L R}_{n}=\mathcal{G}_{2, n}\left(\bar{\beta}_{2}\right)^{\prime} H_{2, \bar{\beta}}^{-1} \mathcal{G}_{2, n}\left(\bar{\beta}_{2}\right)-\mathcal{G}_{1, n}\left(\bar{\beta}_{1}\right)^{\prime} H_{1, \bar{\beta}}^{-1} \mathcal{G}_{1, n}\left(\bar{\beta}_{1}\right)+o_{p}(1),
$$

which converges to a weighted sum of independent $\chi_{1}^{2}$ random variables in which the weights ( $\lambda_{1}, \cdots, \lambda_{d_{1}+d_{2}}$ ) is the vector of eigenvalues of the following matrix

$$
\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty} \operatorname{Var}\left(\left[\begin{array}{l}
\mathcal{G}_{2, n}\left(\bar{\beta}_{2}\right) \\
\mathcal{G}_{1, n}\left(\bar{\beta}_{1}\right)
\end{array}\right]\right)\left[\begin{array}{ll}
H_{2, \bar{\beta}}^{-1} & \\
& -H_{1, \bar{\beta}}^{-1}
\end{array}\right]
$$

where, for copula model $j=1,2, H_{j, \bar{\beta}}$ and $\mathcal{G}_{j, n}\left(\bar{\beta}_{j}\right)$ are defined as in (2.4) and (3.7) respectively.
Theorem 8 shows that, under our assumptions, the limiting distribution of the pseudo-likelihoodratio (PLR) test $\widehat{L R}_{n}$ is the same as the infeasible PLR statistic $L R_{n}$ based on unobserved Markov series $\left\{Y_{t}\right\}_{t=1}^{n}$.

For the generalized non-nested case, the null hypothesis $\mathrm{H}_{0}$ is a composite hypothesis, and we may consider the least favorable configuration (LFC) that satisfies

$$
\mathrm{E}\left[\log \frac{c_{2}\left(F^{*}\left(Y_{t-1}\right), F^{*}\left(Y_{t}\right), \bar{\beta}_{2}\right)}{c_{1}\left(F^{*}\left(Y_{t-1}\right), F^{*}\left(Y_{t}\right), \bar{\beta}_{1}\right)}\right]=0 .
$$

Thus, under the LFC $\sqrt{n} \widehat{L R_{n}}=\sqrt{n} L R_{n}+o_{p}(1) \Rightarrow N\left(0, \omega^{2}\right)$, with

$$
\begin{equation*}
\omega^{2}=\lim \operatorname{Var}\left(\frac{1}{\sqrt{n}} \sum_{t=2}^{n}\left[\log \frac{c_{2}\left(U_{t-1}, U_{t}, \bar{\beta}_{2}\right)}{c_{1}\left(U_{t-1}, U_{t}, \bar{\beta}_{1}\right)}+\sum_{j=1}^{2}\left\{g_{t, 2 j}\left(\bar{\beta}_{2}\right)-g_{t, 1 j}\left(\bar{\beta}_{1}\right)\right\}\right]\right), \tag{4.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

where for $i=1,2 ; j=1,2$,

$$
g_{t, i j}\left(\bar{\beta}_{i}\right)=\mathrm{E}\left\{\left.\frac{\partial \log c_{i}\left(U_{s-1}, U_{s}, \bar{\beta}_{i}\right)}{\partial U_{s-2+j}}\left[1\left(U_{t} \leq U_{s-2+j}\right)-U_{s-2+j}\right] \right\rvert\, U_{t}\right\} .
$$

Let $\widehat{\omega}^{2}$ be a consistent long-run variance estimator of $\omega^{2}$ based on

$$
\log \frac{c_{2}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t-1}\right), \widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t}\right), \widehat{\beta}_{2}\right)}{c_{1}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t-1}\right), \widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t}\right), \widehat{\beta}_{1}\right)}+\sum_{j=1}^{2}\left\{\widehat{g}_{t, 2 j}\left(\widehat{\beta}_{2}\right)-\widehat{g}_{t, 1 j}\left(\widehat{\beta}_{1}\right)\right\}
$$

where for $i=1,2 ; j=1,2$,

$$
\widehat{g}_{t, i j}\left(\widehat{\beta}_{i}\right)=\frac{1}{n} \sum_{l=2}^{n} \frac{\partial \log c_{i}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{l-1}\right), \widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{l}\right), \widehat{\beta}_{i}\right)}{\partial U_{l-2+j}}\left[1\left(\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t}\right) \leq \widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{l-2+j}\right)\right)-\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{l-2+j}\right)\right] .
$$

Then for the generalized non-nested case and under the LFC we have:

$$
\mathcal{L} \mathcal{R}_{n}=\frac{\sqrt{n} \overline{L R}_{n}}{\widehat{\omega}} \Rightarrow N(0,1)
$$

We note that many empirical applications use non-nested copula models, and the model selection test $\mathcal{L} \mathcal{R}_{n}$ is directly applicable.

## 5. Monte Carlo Studies

In this section, we exam the finite sample performance of the parametric and semiparametric copula estimators based on filtered time series $\left\{\widehat{Y}_{t}\right\}$. We compare the sampling performance of the semiparametric estimator $\widehat{\beta}_{S P}$ with the parametric estimator $\widehat{\beta}_{P}$ under correct and incorrect specifications of the marginal distribution $F^{*}$ (of the latent $Y_{t}$ ). Let $\widehat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ and $\widehat{\beta}_{P 1}$ be the $\widehat{\beta}_{P}$ under correct and incorrect specification of $F^{*}$ respectively. We also report two infeasible copula estimators using the true values of $\left\{Y_{t}\right\}$ : the infeasible parametric estimator $\widetilde{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ under correct specification of $F^{*}$, and the infeasible semiparametric estimator $\widetilde{\beta}_{S P}$ using $\left\{Y_{t}\right\}$ as the data.

DGP designs: The observed time series $\left\{Z_{t}\right\}_{t=1}^{n}$ is generated by model (2.1), where the latent $\left\{Y_{t}\right\}_{t=1}^{n}$ satisfies Assumption DGP.

In the Monte Carlo studies, we have examed various combinations of three kinds of filtering part $X_{t}^{\prime} \pi^{*}$, four kinds of copula functions $C\left(\cdot, \cdot ; \beta^{*}\right)$ with a range value of the copula parameter $\beta^{*}$, and two kinds of marginal distributions $F^{*}$.

Three types of $X_{t}^{\prime} \pi^{*}$ : (1) $X_{t}=(1, t)^{\prime}$ is a deterministic linear trend, and $Z_{t}=\pi_{0}^{*}+\pi_{1}^{*} t+Y_{t}$ with $\pi^{*}=(0.2,0.3)^{\prime}$.
(2) $Z_{t}$ (and thus $X_{t}=Z_{t-1}$ ) is an unit root process: $Z_{t}=\pi^{*} Z_{t-1}+Y_{t}$ with $\pi^{*}=1$.
(3) $X_{t}=X_{t-1}+\varepsilon_{t}$ and is cointegrated with $Z_{t}$, with $Z_{t}=\pi^{*} X_{t}+Y_{t}$ and $\pi^{*}=1$.

Two types of true marginal distributions $F^{*}:$ (i) symmetric one: student- $t(3)$ distribution; (ii) asymmetric one: re-centered Chi-square with d.f. 3.

Four types of copula functions: (A) Gaussian Copula: $C(u, v ; \beta)=\Phi_{\beta}\left(\Phi^{-1}(u), \Phi^{-1}(v)\right)$, where $\Phi_{\beta}(\cdot, \cdot)$ is the bivariate normal distribution with mean zeros, variances 1 , and correlation coefficient $\beta$, and $\Phi$ is the univariate standard normal CDF.
(B). Frank copula: $C(u, v ; \beta)=-\frac{1}{\beta} \cdot \log \left(1-\frac{\left(1-e^{-\beta u}\right)\left(1-e^{-\beta v}\right)}{1-e^{-\beta}}\right)$ for $\beta \neq 0$.
(C). Clayton copula: $C(u, v ; \beta)=\left[u^{-\beta}+v^{-\beta}-1\right]^{-1 / \beta}$ for $\beta>0$.
(D) Gumbel copula: $C(u, v ; \beta)=\exp \left\{-\left((-\ln u)^{\beta}+(-\ln v)^{\beta}\right)^{1 / \beta}\right\}$ for $1 \leq \beta<\infty$.

Gaussian and Frank copulas have zero tail dependence. Clayton copula has zero upper tail dependence but positive lower tail dependence $\left(2^{-1 / \beta}\right)$ that increases with $\beta$. Gumbel copula has zero lower tail dependence but positive upper tail dependence $\left(2-2^{1 / \beta}\right)$ that increases with $\beta$. The overall temporal dependence in $Y_{t}$ measured as Kendall's tau is all increasing with copula parameter $\beta$ in all these copula models. Finally, the $Y_{t}$ generated according to all these copula functions are automatically beta-mixing with exponential decay. See, e.g., Chen, Wu and Yi (2009).

For all the above models, we investigate the finite sample performance of the five copula estimators mentioned at the beginning of this section: the three feasible ones $\widehat{\beta}_{S P}, \widehat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ and $\widehat{\beta}_{P 1}$ use the nonstationary filtered data $\left\{\widehat{Y}_{t}\right\}$; and the two infeasible ones $\widetilde{\beta}_{S P}$ and $\widetilde{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ use the true $\left\{Y_{t}\right\}_{t=1}^{n}$ process. Recall that $\widehat{\beta}_{S P}$ and $\widetilde{\beta}_{S P}$ have the same asymptotic normal distribution, which does not depend on
the filtration or the functional form of $F^{*}$. The infeasible $\widetilde{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ is asymptotically normal, with the limiting distribution independent of the filtration but does depend on the parametric estimation of $F^{*}$. The two feasible parametric estimators $\widehat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ and $\widehat{\beta}_{P 1}$ have complex limiting distributions that depend on both the filtration and the parametric estimation of $F^{*}$, while they are asymptotically normal under deterministic trend filtration, are generally non-normal under stochastic trend (the unit root and cointegration) filtration. $\widehat{\beta}_{P 1}$ is computed using $N\left(0, \bar{\alpha}^{2}\right)$ as the misspecified parametric marginal distribution; while $\widehat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ and $\widetilde{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ are computed using corrected specified parametric marginal distribution.

In Appendix A and the Online Appendix C, we present all the monte Carlo tables. For each table, the number of Monte Carlo repetition is 2000 and the simulated sample size is $n=500$. In addition, we also considered a larger sample size of $n=2000$ for deterministic trending models to illustrate the performance as sample sizes increases. The Monte Carlo bias, variance, and the Ratio of MSE of an estimator over the MSE of $\widehat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$, denoted by "Ramse", are reported in each table.

All the simulations reveal the following patterns. First, the semiparametric copula estimator $\widehat{\beta}_{S P}$ performs well in terms of finite sample bias, variance, "Ramse" compared to the correctly specified parametric estimator $\widehat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ in most situations. Second, for all the cases when there is no strong tail dependence, both the semiparametric copula estimator $\widehat{\beta}_{S P}$ and the correctly specified parametric copula estimator $\widehat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ perform much better than the parametric copula estimator $\widehat{\beta}_{P 1}$ using incorrectly specified parametric marginals. The parametric copula estimator for $\beta^{*}$ is very sensitive to the specification of parametric marginals, while the semiparametric copula estimator is truly robust to functional form of marginals as well as the nonstationary filtering. Third, the feasible semiparametric estimator $\widehat{\beta}_{S P}$ and its infeasible version $\tilde{\beta}_{S P}$ are reasonably close, corroborating the asymptotic results - the efficiency loss from filtration in the semiparametric estimators are of second order magnitude. The feasible parametric estimator $\widehat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ and its infeasible version $\widetilde{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ are less close to each other, signaling that the parametric estimator is sensitive to nonstationary filtration. Forth, it is interesting to note that for Clayton and Gumbel copulas with very strong asymmetric tail dependence (i.e., very large parameter values $\beta^{*}$ ), the infeasible parametric copula estimators $\widetilde{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ perform better than the feasible parametric estimator $\widehat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ and the semiparametric estimators, $\widehat{\beta}_{S P}$ and $\tilde{\beta}_{S P}$. Nevertheless, the performance of $\widehat{\beta}_{S P}$ is again similar to the infeasible $\tilde{\beta}_{S P}$ for Clayton and Gumbel copulas with very strong asymmetric tail dependence. ${ }^{2}$

[^2]
## 6. Empirical Applications

In this section, we consider two empirical applications to highlight the potentials of our proposed models and methods.

### 6.1. An application to macro time series

An important literature in empirical macroeconomic analysis is the study of long-run properties and short term dynamics of GNP. Many studies (e.g. Blanchard 1981, Kydland and Prescott 1980, etc) argue that GNP reverts to a long term trend following a shock, and that fluctuations in output represent temporary deviations from the trend. Various macroeconomic theories are designed to produce and understand the dynamics of transitory fluctuations that deviates from the long run trend. Studies on the transitory shocks provide important information on the prediction of variation in GNP growth. (see, e.g. Cochrane (1994), King, Plosser, Stock and Watson (1991)).

A time series that provides a good estimate of the "trend" in GNP is "consumption". Cochrane (1994) provides empirical evidence on the role of consumption as an measurement of long run component in GNP. In this section, we apply our model to estimate the short term dynamics in GNP time series based on the cointegrating regression of GNP on consumption. In particular, we consider the following trending cointegrating regression

$$
\begin{equation*}
Z_{t}=a_{0}+a_{1} t+a_{2} X_{t}+Y_{t} \tag{6.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $Z_{t}$ is the logarithm of real GNP and $X_{t}$ is the logarithm of real consumption. The permanent component of the GNP series is characterized by a linear time trend combined with a stochastic trend $X_{t}$. We assume that the latent process $\left\{Y_{t}\right\}$ is a stationary first-order Markov process generated from a flexible copula $C(\cdot, \cdot ; \beta)$.

All data are from FRED ${ }^{\circledR}$ Economic Data. ${ }^{3}$ We consider quarterly time series from 1947 Q1 to 2019 Q2, with length 290. Consumption is defined as the sum of nondurables and services. We first exam the nonstationarity of these series. In particular, we apply the ADF test to these series based on the following regression

$$
Z_{t}=b_{0}+\delta t+\rho Z_{t-1}+\sum_{i=1}^{p} b_{i} \Delta Z_{t-i}+\varepsilon_{t}
$$

The ADF test statistics of the GNP and consumption time series are -1.933 (lag length $=2$ ), and -0.349 (lag length $=2$ ) respectively, both are smaller (in absolute value) than the $5 \%$ critical value $(-3.43)$, thus the null hypothesis of a unit root can not be rejected. We then exam the relationship

[^3]

Figure 6.1: Scatter Plot of the standardized GNP residuals
between these two time series based on the cointegrating regression (6.1). The Engle-Granger twostep cointegration test statistic is -4.483 , rejecting the null hypothesis of no cointegration ( $5 \%$ critical value -3.81 ).

Next, we study the short term dynamics in the latent process $\left\{Y_{t}\right\}$ using the fitted residual series $\left\{\widehat{Y}_{t}\right\}$ obtained from the cointegrating regression (6.1). Figure 6.1 presents the scatter plot of the empirical cdf standardized realizations of the filtered time series $\left\{\widehat{Y}_{t}\right\}$. The figure indicates possibly presence of asymmetric positive tail dependence.

Given the small sample size of $n=290$, to capture possibly asymmetric tail dependence we consider the Joe-Clayton copula:

$$
\begin{equation*}
C(u, v ; \beta)=1-\left\{1-\left[\left(1-\bar{u}^{\beta_{2}}\right)^{-\beta_{1}}+\left(1-\bar{v}^{\beta_{2}}\right)^{-\beta_{1}}-1\right]^{-1 / \beta_{1}}\right\}^{1 / \beta_{2}}, \tag{6.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\bar{u}=1-u, \bar{v}=1-v, \beta=\left(\beta_{1}, \beta_{2}\right)^{\prime}$ and $\beta_{1}>0, \beta_{2} \geq 1$. This family of copulas has the lower tail dependence given by $\lambda_{L}=2^{-1 / \beta_{1}}$ and the upper tail dependence given by $\lambda_{U}=2-2^{1 / \beta_{2}}$. When $\beta_{2}=1$, the Joe-Clayton copula reduces to the Clayton copula. When $\beta_{1} \rightarrow 0$, the Joe-Clayton copula approaches the Joe copula whose upper tail dependence increase as $\beta_{2}$ increases. See Joe (1997) and Patton (2006) for other properties of the Joe-Clayton copula.

In addition to the Joe-Clayton copula, we also consider the following potential competitive choices: (let $c^{C}$ and $c^{G}$ be density functions of Clayton and Gumbel copulas, respectively)

1. Mixture of Clayton and survival Clayton: $c^{C C}(u, v ; \beta)=0.5\left[c^{C}\left(u, v ; \beta_{1}\right)+c^{C}\left(1-u, 1-v ; \beta_{2}\right)\right]$.
2. Mixture of Gumbel and survival Gumbel: $c^{G G}(u, v ; \beta)=0.5\left[c^{G}\left(u, v ; \beta_{2}\right)+c^{G}\left(1-u, 1-v ; \beta_{1}\right)\right]$.
3. Mixture of Clayton and Gumbel: $c^{C G}(u, v ; \beta)=0.5\left[c^{C}\left(u, v ; \beta_{1}\right)+c^{G}\left(u, v ; \beta_{2}\right)\right]$.

In all these candidate copula densities, $\beta_{1}$ measures lower tail dependence and $\beta_{2}$ measures upper tail dependence. We use the pseudo-likelihood-ratio (PLR) test in Section 4.2 (and Theorem 8) for a pairwise comparison and copula model selection between the Joe-Clayton copula and each of the above three competitors. Given the choices of copulas, the tests are non-nested. We denote the above three alternatives as Alternatives 1, 2, 3. The calculated PLR test statistics against Alternatives 1, 2, 3 are $0.07889,0.60470,0.39436$ respectively. The Null hypothesis of Joe-Clayton copula model can not be rejected even at $10 \%$ level. For this reason, we continue our analysis below using the Joe-Clayton copula.

We examine tail dependence based on our semiparametric two-step Joe-Clayton copula parameter estimates $\left(\widehat{\beta}_{1}, \widehat{\beta}_{2}\right)$ for $\left(\beta_{1}, \beta_{2}\right)$. The point estimate for $\beta_{1}$ is $\widehat{\beta}_{1}=3.902$ (with the standard deviation 0.774 ), and the corresponding $95 \%$ confidence interval is [2.384, 5.419], which clearly excludes zero and provides empirical evidence of lower tail dependence. The point estimate for $\beta_{2}$ is $\widehat{\beta}_{2}=2.765$ (with the standard deviation 0.516 ), and the corresponding $95 \%$ confidence interval is [1.754, 3.775], which excludes one and provides empirical evidence of upper tail dependence. Thus, we find both lower and upper tail-dependence in the short term dynamics of GNP.

### 6.2. An application to financial time series

The CAY time series (Lettau and Ludvigson (2001)) has been often used in macro-finance applications. Lettau and Ludvigson (2001, 2003, 2009), Chen and Ludvigson (2009) studied the role of consumption and fluctuations in the aggregate consumption-wealth ratio for predicting stock returns. They argue that investors who want to maintain a flat consumption path over time will attempt to "smooth out" transitory movements in their asset wealth arising from time variation in expected returns. When excess returns are expected to be higher in the future, forward-looking investors will react by increasing consumption out of current asset wealth and labor income, allowing consumption to rise above its common trend with those variables. When excess returns are expected to be lower in the future, these investors will react by decreasing consumption out of current asset wealth and labor income, and consumption will fall below its shared trend with these variables. In this way, investors may insulate future consumption from fluctuations in expected returns, and stationary deviations from


Figure 6.2: Scatter Plot of the standardized CAY residual time series
the shared trend among consumption, asset holdings, and labor income are likely to be a predictor of excess stock returns.

We apply the copula model to capture the short term dynamics in the consumption-wealth ratio time series. Since this time series is not directly observed, Lettau and Ludvigson (2001) argue that consumption $\left(\mathbf{c}_{t}\right)$, asset holding $\left(\mathbf{a}_{t}\right)$ and labor income $\left(\mathbf{y}_{t}\right)$ are cointegrated, and that deviations from this shared trend summarize agents' expectations of future returns on the market portfolio. In particular, the residual term from a cointegrating regression of consumption ( $\mathbf{c}_{t}$ ) on asset holding ( $\mathbf{a}_{t}$ ) and labor income $\left(\mathbf{y}_{t}\right)$ is called the "CAY" time series by Lettau and Ludvigson (2001). The "CAY" time series contain important information of future returns at short horizons.

We use the dataset from the website of Martin Lettau. The time series is from 1952Q4 to 1998Q3. The unit root nonstationarity in time series $\mathbf{c}_{t}, \mathbf{a}_{t}, \mathbf{y}_{t}$ can be verified. In particular, the ADF t-test statistics corresponding to $\left(\mathbf{c}_{t}, \mathbf{a}_{t}, \mathbf{y}_{t}\right)$ are $-1.233,-2.603,-0.7918$, thus the unit root hypothesis can not be rejected. We then consider a cointegrating regression of consumption ( $\mathbf{c}_{t}$ ) on asset holding $\left(\mathbf{a}_{t}\right)$ and labor income $\left(y_{t}\right): \mathbf{c}_{t}=\pi_{0}+\pi_{1} \mathbf{a}_{t}+\pi_{2} \mathbf{y}_{t}+Y_{t}$. The Engle-Granger 2-stage cointegration test statistic is -3.93 , rejecting the null hypothesis of no cointegration (the $5 \%$ level critical value is -3.788 ). Figure 6.2 presents the corresponding scatter plot of standardized realizations of the CAY time series. The figure indicates presence of lower tail dependence.

We again consider the Joe-Clayton copula model given by (6.2) and the three potential competitive choices of copulas that we considered in the previous application. We perform the pseudo-likelihoodratio (PLR) test for pairwise comparisons and selection between the Joe-Clayton copula and each of the three competitors. The calculated PLR test statistics against Alternatives 1, 2, 3 are -0.73935 , $-0.14707,-0.09362$ respectively, and thus the Joe-Clayton copula is still selected. Consequently, we perform the rest of our analysis based on the Joe-Clayton copula.

We examine tail dependence based on our semiparametric two-step Joe-Clayton copula parameter estimates $\left(\widehat{\beta}_{1}, \widehat{\beta}_{2}\right)$ for $\left(\beta_{1}, \beta_{2}\right)$. The point estimate for $\beta_{1}$ is $\widehat{\beta}_{1}=2.050$ (with the standard deviation 0.414 ), and the corresponding $95 \%$ confidence interval is [1.238, 2.861], which clearly excludes zero and provides empirical evidence of lower tail dependence. The point estimate for $\beta_{2}$ is $\widehat{\beta}_{2}=1.356$ (with the standard deviation 0.195), and the corresponding $95 \%$ confidence interval is [ $0.973,1.738$ ], which includes one near the left edge of the confidence interval. Therefore, the empirical evidence for upper tail dependence is relatively weak. Thus, we find significant lower tail dependence and mild upper tail dependence in this CAY time series.

## 7. Conclusion

We propose a component approach to study nonstationary time series with nonlinear short term dynamics that may also exhibit tail dependence. The observed time series can be decomposed into a nonstationary part and a stationary Markov component generated via a copula. The nonstationary component can be removed by a filtration, and the copula-based Markov model is used to capture the weakly dependent nonlinear dynamics (and the tail dependence) in the filtered time series.

When the marginal distribution of the filtered time series is parametrically estimated, we show that the limiting distribution of the parametric (two-step) copula estimator can be affected by the filtration and the estimation of the marginal distribution, and may not be normal under stochastic trend filtration. However, when the marginal distribution of the filtered time series is nonparametrically estimated, we find that the limiting distribution of the semiparametric (two-step) copula estimator is not affected by the nonstationary filtration and is asymptotically normal. The surprising result for the semiparametric two-step copula estimator is also extended to models with misspecified residual copula function. Monte Carlo studies reveal that, for different kinds of nonstationarity, symmetric or asymmetric unknown marginal distributions, various copula functions with or without tail dependence, our semiparametric (two-step) copula estimator not only is robust, but also performs very similarly to the infeasible semiparametric copula estimator without filtration. The simple and robust asymptotic properties of the semiparametric estimators greatly simplify statistical inferences on nonstationary filtered copula-based time series models. Our results have many practical implications for empirical analysis of nonstationary nonlinear time series in economics and finance.

The results in this paper can be extended in many directions. First, other copula estimators, such as those in Oh and Patton (2013) and Chen, Wu and Yi (2009), can be studied. Second, multivariate nonstationary filtration can be considered, in which the latent stationary multivariate Markov process can be modeled using a multivariate copula function as in Remillard, Papageorgiou and Soustra (2012) and Beare and Seo (2015).

## Acknowledgements

Ron Gallant has positively influenced us for many years through his creative research and humorous yet insightful comments. We thank George Tauchen (Guest Editor), an Associate Editor, two anonymous referees, Oliver Linton, Peter Robinson, James Stock, Qingsong Yao and participants at the 2014 JSM and the 2018 FERM conference for helpful comments on early versions. Xiaohong Chen thanks the Cowles Foundation for research support. Zhijie Xiao thanks Boston College for research support.

## References

[1] Andrews, D. W., 1991, Heteroskedasticity and autocorrelation consistent covariance matrix estimation. Econometrica, 817-858.
[2] Beare, B., 2010, Copulas and temporal dependence, Econometrica 78, 395-410.
[3] Beare, B., and J. Seo, 2015, Vine copula specifications for stationary multivariate Markov chains. Journal of Time Series Analysis, 36(2), 228-246.
[4] Billingsley, P., 1968, Convergence of probability measures. John Wiley \& Sons.
[5] Blanchard, O. J. 1981, Output, the stock market, and interest rates, The American Economic Review, 71, 132-143.
[6] Chen, X. and Y. Fan, 2006a, Estimation of Copula-Based Semiparametric Time Series Models, Journal of Econometrics 130, 307-335.
[7] Chen, X. and Y. Fan, 2006b, Estimation and Model Selection of Semiparametric Copula-based Multivariate Dynamic Models under Copula Misspecification, Journal of Econometrics 135, 125-154.
[8] Chen, X. and S. Ludvigson., 2009, Land of addicts? an empirical investigation of habit-based asset pricing models. Journal of Applied Econometrics 24, 1057-1093.
[9] Chen, X., Huang, Z., \& Yi, Y. (2020). Efficient estimation of multivariate semi-nonparametric GARCH filtered copula models. Journal of Econometrics, forthcoming.
[10] Chen, X., Koenker, R., \& Xiao, Z. (2009). Copula-based nonlinear quantile autoregression. The Econometrics Journal, 12, S50-S67.
[11] Chen, X., W. Wu and Y. Yi, 2009, Efficient Estimation of Copula-Based Semiparametric Markov Models. Annals of Statistics 37 (6B): 4214-53.
[12] Cherubini, U., F. Gobbi, S. Mulinacci and S. Romagnoli, 2012, Dynamic Copula Methods in Finance. Chichester: Wiley.
[13] Cochrane, J., 1994, Permanent and transitory components of GNP and stock prices. The Quarterly Journal of Economics 109, 241-265.
[14] Csorgo, M., Csorgo, S., Horváth, L., \& Mason, D. M. (1986). Weighted empirical and quantile processes. The Annals of Probability, 31-85.
[15] Csörgö, M., \& Horváth, L. (1993). Weighted approximations in probability and statistics. J. Wiley \& Sons.
[16] Doukhan, P., 1994, Mixing: Properties and Examples. New York, Springer.
[17] Gallant, A. R., 2009, Nonlinear statistical models. John Wiley \& Sons.
[18] Gallant, A. R., Rossi, P. E., \& Tauchen, G., 1993, Nonlinear dynamic structures, Econometrica, 871-907.
[19] Genest, C., K. Ghoudi and L. Rivest, 1995, A semiparametric estimation procedure of dependence parameters in multivariate families of distributions. Biometrika 82, 543-552.
[20] Granger, C.W.J., 2002, Time Series Concept for Conditional Distributions, Manuscript, UCSD.
[21] Hannan, E., 1970, Multiple Time Series, John Wiley \& Sons.
[22] Ibragimov, R., 2009, Copulas-based characterizations and higher-order Markov processes. Econometric Theory 25, 819-846.
[23] Ibragimov, R. and G. Lentzas, 2017, Copulas and long memory. Probability Surveys 14, 289-327.
[24] Joe, H., 1997, Multivariate Models and Dependence Concepts, Chapman \& Hall/CRC.
[25] Joe, H., 2005, Asymptotic efficiency of the two-stage estimation method for copula-based models. J. Multivariate Anal. 94, 401-419.
[26] Joe, H. and J. Xu, 1996, The Estimation Method of Inference Functions for Margins for Multivariate Models. Technical Report 166, Department of Statistics, University of British Columbia.
[27] King, R., C. Plosser, J. Stock, and M. Watson, 1991, Stochastic trends and economic fluctuations." American Economic Review 81(4).
[28] Kydland, F. and E. Prescott, 1982, Time to build and aggregate fluctuations, Econometrica: 1345-1370.
[29] Lettau, M., and S. Ludvigson, 2001, Consumption, aggregate wealth, and expected stock returns. The Journal of Finance 56: 815-849.
[30] Lettau, M., and S. Ludvigson, 2004, Understanding trend and cycle in asset values: Reevaluating the wealth effect on consumption. American Economic Review 94: 276-299.
[31] Longla, M. and M. Peligrad, 2012, Some aspects of modeling dependence in copula-based Markov chains. Journal of Multivariate Analysis 111, 234-240.
[32] Moricz, F. 1982, A general moment inequality for the maximum of partial sums of single series. Acta Sci. Math. 44, 67-75.
[33] Newey, Whitney K., and Kenneth D. West. "A Simple, Positive Semi-Definite, Heteroskedasticity and Autocorrelation." Econometrica 55.3 (1987): 703-708.
[34] Oh, D., and A. Patton, 2013. Simulated Method of Moments Estimation for Copula based Multivariate Models. Journal of the American Statistical Association, 108, 689-700.
[35] Patton, A. 2006, Modelling asymmetric exchange rate dependence, International Economic Review, 47, 527-556.
[36] Patton, A. 2009, Copula-based models for financial time series, Handbook of Financial Time Series, Springer-Verlag.
[37] Patton, A. 2012, A review of copula models for economic time series, Journal of Multivariate Analysis 110, 4-18.
[38] Pollard, D., 1985, New ways to prove central limit theorems, Econometric Theory, 1, 295-313.
[39] Remillard, B., N. Papageorgiou, and F. Soustra, 2012. Copula-based Semiparametric Models for Multivariate Time Series. Journal of Multivariate Analysis, 110, 30-42.
[40] Shao, Qi-Man, and Hao Yu, 1996, Weak convergence for weighted empirical processes of dependent sequences. The Annals of Probability 24, 2098-2127.
[41] Sklar, A., 1959, Fonctions de r'epartition 'a n dimensionset leurs marges, Publ. Inst. Statis. Univ. Paris 8, 229-231.
[42] Viennet, Gabrielle, 1997, Inequalities for absolutely regular sequences: application to density estimation. Probability theory and related fields 107, 467-492.
[43] White, H., 1982, Maximum likelihood estimation of misspecified models, Econometrica 50, l-26.
[44] Yoshihara, K., 1976, Limiting behavior of U-statistics for stationary, absolutely regular processes. Zeitschrift für Wahrscheinlichkeitstheorie und verwandte Gebiete, 35, 237-252.

## Appendix A: Monte Carlo Results

In the Monte Carlo studies, we have examed various DGPs that are different combinations of three kinds of filtering part $X_{t}^{\prime} \pi^{*}$, four kinds of copula functions $C(\cdot, \cdot ; \beta)$ with a range value of the copula parameter $\beta$, and two kinds of marginal distributions $F^{*}$ of $Y_{t}$ given in Section 5 of the paper. In each table below, the number of Monte Carlo repetition is 2000 and sample size is $n=500$ (we also considered a larger sample size of $n=2000$ in a few tables). The Monte Carlo bias, variance, and "Ramse" (the Ratio of MSE of an estimator over the MSE of $\widehat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ ) are reported in each table.

We investigate the finite sample performance of the semiparametric copula estimator $\widehat{\beta}_{S P}$, the parametric copula estimator $\widehat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ with corrected specified parametric marginal; the parametric copula estimator $\widehat{\beta}_{P 1}$ with a normal distribution $N\left(0, \bar{\alpha}^{2}\right)$ as the incorrectly specified marginal distribution; the infeasible parametric estimator $\widetilde{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ with correctly specified parametric marginal; and the infeasible semiparametric estimator $\widetilde{\beta}_{S P}$. Both $\widetilde{\beta}_{S P}$ and $\widetilde{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ are computed using $\left\{Y_{t}\right\}$ directly, and are presented for comparison purpose.

Recall that $\widehat{\beta}_{S P}$ and $\widetilde{\beta}_{S P}$ have the same asymptotic normal distribution, which does not depend on any filtration and the specification of $F^{*}$. The infeasible $\widetilde{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ is asymptotically normal, with the limiting distribution independent of the filtration but does depend on the parametric estimation of $F^{*}$. The limiting distributions of $\widehat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ and $\widehat{\beta}_{P 1}$ depend on the filtration and the parametric estimation of $F^{*}$ in complicated ways; they are normal under the deterministic trend filtration, but, are generally non-normal under the stochastic trend (the unit root and cointegration) filtration.

Table 1 and Table 2 report the finite sample performances of the estimators for models with deterministic trending time series. In particular, Tables 1A-1D below summarize simulation results corresponding to the deterministic trending model when the true marginal distribution is student- $t(3)$ distribution (symmetric dist.), with Table 1A for Gaussian copula, Table 1B for Frank copula, Table 1C for Clayton copula and Table 1D for Gumbel copula. Similarly, Tables 2A - 2D summarize results corresponding to the deterministic trending model when the true marginal distribution is re-centered Chi-square with d.f. 3, again with "A to D" corresponding to Gaussian, Frank, Clayton and Gumbel copulas.

Tables 3-6 in the Online Appendix C report the finite sample behaviors of the estimators for models with stochastic trends (the unit root and cointegration).

Table 1A: Trending Time Series, Gaussian Copula (True marginal $t(3) ; \tilde{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Ramse $=\tilde{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ mse $/ \hat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ mse)

|  | $n=500$ |  |  |  |  |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $\beta^{*}$ | -0.5 | -0.3 | -0.1 | 0.1 | 0.3 | 0.5 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{S P}$ Bias | -0.0066 | -0.0077 | -0.0063 | -0.0042 | -0.0033 | -0.0049 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{S P}$ Std | 0.0391 | 0.0438 | 0.0462 | 0.0465 | 0.0445 | 0.0401 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{S P}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{1 . 1 2 2 4}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 0 9 1 2}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 0 6 1 3}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 0 3 8 9}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 0 3 6 9}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 0 5 8 8}$ |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Bias | 0.0004 | -0.0014 | -0.0035 | -0.0056 | -0.0076 | -0.0094 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Std | 0.0374 | 0.0425 | 0.0452 | 0.0455 | 0.0431 | 0.0381 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P 1}$ Bias | -0.0046 | -0.0151 | -0.0193 | 0.0078 | 0.0048 | -0.0067 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P 1}$ Std | 0.0721 | 0.0835 | 0.0911 | 0.0945 | 0.0871 | 0.0725 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P_{1}}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{3 . 7 2 6 1}$ | $\mathbf{3 . 9 7 5 1}$ | $\mathbf{4 . 2 2 7 3}$ | $\mathbf{4 . 2 8 9 6}$ | $\mathbf{3 . 9 6 6 0}$ | $\mathbf{3 . 4 4 0 7}$ |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{S P}$ Bias | -0.0065 | -0.0071 | -0.0053 | -0.0027 | -0.0013 | -0.0024 |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{S P}$ Std | 0.0388 | 0.0436 | 0.0461 | 0.0463 | 0.0442 | 0.0397 |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{S P}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{1 . 1 0 6 9}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 0 7 6 3}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 0 5 0 8}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 0 2 6 4}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 0 1 8 1}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 0 2 5 7}$ |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Bias | 0.0002 | -0.0007 | -0.0014 | -0.0022 | -0.0030 | -0.0037 |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Std | 0.0370 | 0.0423 | 0.0450 | 0.0452 | 0.0427 | 0.0375 |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{0 . 9 7 5 8}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 8 7 3}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 8 8 9}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 7 7 5}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 5 6 9}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 2 2 5}$ |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{S P} \mathrm{mse} / \hat{\beta}_{S P} \mathrm{mse}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 8 6 2}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 8 6 4}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 9 0 1}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 8 7 9}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 8 1 9}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 6 8 7}$ |
|  |  | $n=2000$ |  |  |  |  |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{0 . 9 9 7 7}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 9 6 0}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 9 5 8}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 9 2 6}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 8 5 9}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 7 3 1}$ |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{S P}$ mse / $\hat{\beta}_{S P} \mathrm{mse}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 9 9 2}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 9 8 1}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 9 7 8}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 9 8 3}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 9 8 0}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 9 3 5}$ |

Table 1B: Trending Time Series, Frank Copula (True marginal $t(3) ; \tilde{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Ramse $=\tilde{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ mse / $\hat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ mse)

| $n=500$ |  |  |  |  |  |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $\beta^{*}$ | -5 | -3 | -1 | 1 | 3 | 5 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{S P}$ Bias | -0.0115 | -0.0229 | -0.0242 | -0.0310 | -0.0591 | -0.1280 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{S P}$ Std | 0.4025 | 0.3230 | 0.2812 | 0.2812 | 0.3194 | 0.3925 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{S P}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{1 . 2 1 1 8}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 1 0 6 6}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 0 1 7 0}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 0 2 0 7}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 1 2 5 4}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 2 7 4 1}$ |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Bias | 0.0393 | 0.0093 | -0.0103 | -0.0288 | -0.0581 | -0.1116 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Std | 0.3637 | 0.3077 | 0.2797 | 0.2785 | 0.3006 | 0.3483 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P_{1}}$ Bias | -1.5653 | -1.3416 | -0.8315 | 0.7674 | 1.2818 | 1.4765 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P 1}$ Std | 1.1554 | 1.1182 | 1.1144 | 1.1915 | 1.2066 | 1.2242 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P_{1} 1}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{2 8 . 2 9 1 9}$ | $\mathbf{3 2 . 1 8 6 0}$ | $\mathbf{2 4 . 6 8 4 7}$ | $\mathbf{2 5 . 6 1 5 9}$ | $\mathbf{3 3 . 0 5 7 2}$ | $\mathbf{2 7 . 5 0 6 3}$ |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{S P}$ Bias | -0.0330 | -0.0307 | -0.0232 | -0.0218 | -0.0362 | -0.0764 |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{S P}$ Std | 0.3973 | 0.3209 | 0.2799 | 0.2809 | 0.3192 | 0.3915 |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{S P}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{1 . 1 8 7 9}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 0 9 6 3}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 0 0 7 5}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 0 1 2 4}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 1 0 1 0}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 1 8 9 6}$ |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Bias | -0.0144 | -0.0134 | -0.0108 | -0.0092 | -0.0112 | -0.0128 |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Std | 0.3489 | 0.3022 | 0.2776 | 0.2778 | 0.3003 | 0.3454 |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{0 . 9 1 1 4}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 6 5 8}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 8 5 7}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 8 5 4}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 6 3 4}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 8 9 3 5}$ |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{S P}^{\mathrm{mse}} / \hat{\beta}_{S P} \mathrm{mse}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 8 0 3}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 9 0 7}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 9 0 7}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 9 1 9}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 7 8 3}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 3 3 6}$ |
|  |  | $n=2000$ |  |  |  |  |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{0 . 9 6 9 6}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 8 8 7}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 9 6 5}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 9 5 1}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 8 6 7}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 6 1 5}$ |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{S P}^{\mathrm{mse}} / \hat{\beta}_{S P} \mathrm{mse}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 9 3 5}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 9 8 5}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 9 9 2}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 9 9 3}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 9 7 5}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 8 7 5}$ |

Table 1C: Trending Time Series, Clayton Copula (True marginal $t(3) ; \tilde{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Ramse $=\tilde{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ mse / $\hat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ mse)

| $n=500$ |  |  |  |  |  |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $\beta^{*}$ | 0.5 | 1 | 2 | 4 | 6 | 8 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{S P}$ Bias | -0.0012 | -0.0307 | -0.1672 | -0.7897 | -1.8797 | -3.2800 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{S P}$ Std | 0.1040 | 0.1989 | 0.4486 | 0.9392 | 1.2412 | 1.4254 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{S P}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{1 . 3 1 8 4}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 4 8 3 6}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 4 3 1 4}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 2 1 4 1}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 7 4 3 5}$ | $\mathbf{2 . 3 0 3 5}$ |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Bias | -0.0098 | -0.0217 | -0.0787 | -0.3700 | -0.9417 | -1.6985 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Std | 0.0900 | 0.1638 | 0.3923 | 1.0504 | 1.4224 | 1.6333 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P 1}$ Bias | -0.0706 | -0.0086 | 0.1218 | 0.1131 | -0.2723 | -0.9375 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P_{1}}$ Std | 0.4077 | 0.5114 | 0.6111 | 0.9539 | 1.3258 | 1.7819 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P 1}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{2 0 . 8 7 9 9}$ | $\mathbf{9 . 5 7 9 6}$ | $\mathbf{2 . 4 2 4 9}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 7 4 3 9}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 6 2 9 6}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 7 3 0 1}$ |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{S P}$ Bias | 0.0016 | -0.0256 | -0.1415 | -0.6389 | -1.5373 | -2.7485 |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{S P}$ Std | 0.1028 | 0.1905 | 0.4373 | 1.0141 | 1.4205 | 1.6720 |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{S P}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{1 . 2 8 9 9}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 3 5 3 4}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 3 1 9 1}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 1 5 8 3}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 5 0 5 5}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 8 6 3 9}$ |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Bias | -0.0026 | -0.0069 | -0.0171 | -0.0257 | -0.0240 | -0.0160 |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Std | 0.0854 | 0.1343 | 0.2602 | 0.6389 | 1.1813 | 1.7828 |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{0 . 8 8 9 6}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 6 6 2 1}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 4 2 4 6}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 3 2 9 6}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 4 7 9 7}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 5 7 2 5}$ |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{S P^{m s e}} / \hat{\beta}_{S P} \mathrm{mse}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 7 8 4}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 1 2 2}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 2 1 5}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 2 8 9}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 8 6 3 5}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 8 0 9 2}$ |
|  |  | $n=2000$ |  |  |  |  |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{0 . 9 0 5 1}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 7 1 6 7}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 3 9 1 5}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 2 1 5 5}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 1 9 2 3}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 2 5 3 7}$ |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{S P}$ mse / $\hat{\beta}_{S P} \mathrm{mse}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 9 4 8}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 8 3 2}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 5 7 7}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 4 6 4}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 5 2 0}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 3 3 1}$ |

Table 1D: Trending Time Series, Gumbel Copula (True marginal $t(3) ; \tilde{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Ramse $=\tilde{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ mse / $\hat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ mse)

| $n=500$ |  |  |  |  |  |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $\beta^{*}$ | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 | 7 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{S P}$ Bias | -0.0379 | -0.1785 | -0.4513 | -0.8697 | -1.4093 | -2.0454 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{S P}$ Std | 0.1666 | 0.3793 | 0.5882 | 0.7423 | 0.8490 | 0.9330 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{S P}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{1 . 0 7 1 9}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 0 6 4 7}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 1 2 8 6}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 3 5 5 6}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 7 3 7 0}$ | $\mathbf{2 . 1 4 7 6}$ |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Bias | -0.0236 | -0.0907 | -0.2292 | -0.4523 | -0.7562 | -1.1173 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Std | 0.1633 | 0.3960 | 0.6592 | 0.8717 | 0.9932 | 1.0512 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P_{1}}$ Bias | 0.1096 | 0.0663 | -0.0742 | -0.3122 | -0.6547 | -1.0985 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P 1}$ Std | 0.3842 | 0.5599 | 0.7989 | 1.0189 | 1.2148 | 1.4015 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P_{1} 1}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{5 . 8 6 2 6}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 9 2 6 2}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 3 2 1 8}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 1 7 7 5}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 2 2 2 0}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 3 4 7 3}$ |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{S P}$ Bias | -0.0321 | -0.1540 | -0.3861 | -0.7354 | -1.1963 | -1.7464 |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{S P}$ Std | 0.1596 | 0.3512 | 0.5534 | 0.7335 | 0.8846 | 1.0121 |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{S P}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{0 . 9 7 3 2}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 8 9 0 9}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 3 4 9}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 1 1 8 7}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 4 2 0 4}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 7 3 1 1}$ |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Bias | -0.0066 | -0.0225 | -0.0533 | -0.0962 | -0.1456 | -0.1927 |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Std | 0.1264 | 0.2810 | 0.4848 | 0.7297 | 1.0384 | 1.4401 |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{0 . 5 8 8 7}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 4 8 1 5}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 4 8 8 3}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 5 6 1 8}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 7 0 5 4}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 8 9 7 1}$ |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{S P}^{\mathrm{mse}} / \hat{\beta}_{S P} \mathrm{mse}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 0 7 9}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 8 3 6 8}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 8 2 8 4}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 8 2 5 2}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 8 1 7 7}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 8 0 6 1}$ |
|  |  | $n=2000$ |  |  |  |  |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{0 . 6 2 6 0}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 4 7 1 0}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 4 4 3 5}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 4 3 7 6}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 4 4 5 1}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 4 4 9 6}$ |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{S P}^{\mathrm{mse}} / \hat{\beta}_{S P} \mathrm{mse}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 3 3 0}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 8 7 3 2}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 8 8 1 9}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 8 7 4 4}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 8 5 8 9}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 8 5 2 1}$ |

Table 2A: Trending Time Series, Gaussian Copula
(True marginal: re-centered Chi-square with d.f. 3 ; $n=500$ )

| $\beta^{*}$ | -0.5 | -0.3 | -0.1 | 0.1 | 0.3 | 0.5 |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $\hat{\beta}_{S P}$ Bias | -0.0062 | -0.0074 | -0.0059 | -0.0037 | -0.0028 | -0.0046 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{S P}$ Std | 0.0387 | 0.0436 | 0.0463 | 0.0466 | 0.0447 | 0.0404 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{S P}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{1 . 3 2 1 1}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 0 5 1 9}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 5 8 9}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 5 2 1}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 3 0 9}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 0 5 4}$ |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Bias | -0.0053 | -0.0078 | -0.0068 | -0.0006 | 0.0083 | 0.0147 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Std | 0.0337 | 0.0425 | 0.0472 | 0.0479 | 0.0456 | 0.0401 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P_{1}}$ Bias | 0.0897 | 0.0437 | 0.0079 | -0.0181 | -0.0344 | -0.0414 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P 1}$ Std | 0.0302 | 0.0371 | 0.0431 | 0.0476 | 0.0496 | 0.0479 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P 1}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{7 . 7 1 6 3}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 7 6 5 0}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 8 4 5 7}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 1 2 6 2}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 6 8 9 5}$ | $\mathbf{2 . 1 9 0 2}$ |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{S P}$ Bias | -0.0065 | -0.0071 | -0.0053 | -0.0027 | -0.0013 | -0.0024 |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{S P}$ Std | 0.0388 | 0.0436 | 0.0461 | 0.0463 | 0.0442 | 0.0397 |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{S P}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{1 . 3 3 7 1}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 0 4 6 0}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 4 8 3}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 3 7 1}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 0 7 7}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 8 6 3 9}$ |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Bias | 0.0044 | 0.0029 | 0.0000 | -0.0036 | -0.0063 | -0.0074 |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Std | 0.0320 | 0.0400 | 0.0444 | 0.0446 | 0.0404 | 0.0324 |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{0 . 9 0 1 3}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 8 6 4 6}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 8 6 7 9}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 8 7 0 5}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 7 7 6 3}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 6 0 4 7}$ |

Table 2B: Trending Time Series, Frank Copula
(True marginal: re-centered Chi-square with d.f. $3 ; n=500$ )

| $\beta^{*}$ | -5 | -3 | -1 | 1 | 3 | 5 |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $\hat{\beta}_{S P}$ Bias | -0.0297 | -0.0344 | -0.0297 | -0.0296 | -0.0440 | -0.0851 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{S P}$ Std | 0.3970 | 0.3214 | 0.2809 | 0.2819 | 0.3222 | 0.4001 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{S P}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{1 . 3 1 5 0}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 0 8 1 1}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 5 1 9}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 6 2 3}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 8 3 4 1}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 6 3 8 0}$ |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Bias | -0.0425 | -0.0523 | -0.0433 | 0.0036 | 0.0988 | 0.2274 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Std | 0.3445 | 0.3065 | 0.2863 | 0.2889 | 0.3421 | 0.4589 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P_{1} 1}$ Bias | 0.4944 | 0.0962 | 0.0035 | 0.1712 | 0.3759 | 0.5257 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P_{1}}$ Std | 0.3021 | 0.2970 | 0.3018 | 0.3392 | 0.4140 | 0.5400 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P_{1}}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{2 . 7 8 5 5}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 0 0 8 4}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 0 8 6 1}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 7 2 9 6}$ | $\mathbf{2 . 4 6 6 4}$ | $\mathbf{2 . 1 6 5 6}$ |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{S P}$ Bias | -0.0330 | -0.0307 | -0.0232 | -0.0218 | -0.0362 | -0.0764 |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{S P}$ Std | 0.3973 | 0.3209 | 0.2799 | 0.2809 | 0.3192 | 0.3915 |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{S P}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{1 . 3 1 8 8}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 0 7 4 7}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 4 1 1}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 5 0 8}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 8 1 4 0}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 6 0 6 6}$ |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Bias | 0.0033 | -0.0013 | -0.0065 | -0.0132 | -0.0208 | -0.0255 |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Std | 0.3370 | 0.2967 | 0.2764 | 0.2762 | 0.2943 | 0.3336 |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{0 . 9 4 2 3}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 1 0 8}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 1 1 4}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 1 5 8}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 6 8 6 6}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 4 2 6 7}$ |

Table 2C: Trending Time Series, Clayton Copula
(True marginal: re-centered Chi-square with d.f. 3 ; $n=500$ )

| $\beta^{*}$ | 0.5 | 1 | 2 | 4 | 6 | 8 |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $\hat{\beta}_{S P}$ Bias | -0.0077 | -0.0524 | -0.2290 | -0.9035 | -1.9578 | -3.2889 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{S P}$ Std | 0.1014 | 0.1830 | 0.4007 | 0.8853 | 1.2933 | 1.5443 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{S P}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{0 . 8 7 5 8}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 0 2 4 8}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 2 2 1 3}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 2 9 2 8}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 2 6 8 4}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 1 7 3 3}$ |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Bias | 0.0022 | -0.0198 | -0.1264 | -0.5526 | -1.2366 | -2.0305 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Std | 0.1086 | 0.1870 | 0.3981 | 0.9655 | 1.6767 | 2.6700 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P_{1}}$ Bias | 0.6251 | 0.7053 | 0.7347 | 0.6051 | 0.3685 | -0.0129 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P_{1}}$ Std | 0.1651 | 0.2284 | 0.4478 | 1.1839 | 2.3474 | 3.5508 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P_{1}}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{3 5 . 4 0 6 7}$ | $\mathbf{1 5 . 5 4 6 3}$ | $\mathbf{4 . 2 4 3 8}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 4 2 8 3}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 3 0 0 8}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 1 2 0 5}$ |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{S P}$ Bias | 0.0016 | -0.0256 | -0.1415 | -0.6389 | -1.5373 | -2.7485 |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{S P}$ Std | 0.1028 | 0.1905 | 0.4373 | 1.0141 | 1.4205 | 1.6720 |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{S P}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{0 . 8 9 5 9}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 0 4 5 4}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 2 1 0 9}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 1 6 0 7}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 0 0 9 3}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 1 9 8}$ |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Bias | -0.0327 | -0.0773 | -0.2062 | -0.6221 | -1.2212 | -1.9876 |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Std | 0.0851 | 0.1402 | 0.2823 | 0.6896 | 1.2753 | 1.8589 |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{0 . 7 0 3 9}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 7 2 5 4}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 7 0 0 7}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 6 9 6 9}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 7 1 8 3}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 6 5 8 2}$ |

Table 2D: Trending Time Series, Gumbel Copula
(True marginal: re-centered Chi-square with d.f. $3 ; n=500$ )

| $\beta^{*}$ | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 | 7 |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $\hat{\beta}_{S P}$ Bias | -0.0217 | -0.1278 | -0.3610 | -0.7509 | -1.2756 | -1.9110 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{S P}$ Std | 0.1736 | 0.4040 | 0.6410 | 0.8087 | 0.9238 | 1.0039 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{S P}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{0 . 9 3 0 8}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 4 9 8}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 0 0 9 0}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 1 7 6 2}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 6 2 8 6}$ | $\mathbf{2 . 4 8 5 0}$ |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Bias | 0.1061 | 0.2632 | 0.4169 | 0.5329 | 0.5779 | 0.5270 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Std | 0.1471 | 0.3461 | 0.6021 | 0.8668 | 1.0905 | 1.2639 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P_{1}}$ Bias | -0.1716 | -0.2440 | -0.4207 | -0.7133 | -1.1187 | -1.6247 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P 1}$ Std | 0.2353 | 0.5360 | 0.8422 | 1.1149 | 1.3327 | 1.4940 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P_{1}}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{2 . 5 7 7 3}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 8 3 4 0}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 6 5 2 6}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 6 9 2 2}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 9 8 7 6}$ | $\mathbf{2 . 5 9 8 0}$ |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{S P}$ Bias | -0.0321 | -0.1540 | -0.3861 | -0.7354 | -1.1963 | -1.7464 |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{S P}$ Std | 0.1596 | 0.3512 | 0.5534 | 0.7335 | 0.8846 | 1.0121 |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{S P}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{0 . 8 0 5 2}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 7 7 7 6}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 8 4 8 9}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 0 4 2 1}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 4 5 3 2}$ | $\mathbf{2 . 1 7 2 6}$ |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Bias | -0.0091 | -0.0234 | -0.0334 | -0.0305 | -0.0072 | 0.0184 |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Std | 0.0758 | 0.1225 | 0.2694 | 0.5207 | 0.8738 | 1.2924 |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{0 . 1 7 7 3}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 0 8 2 2}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 1 3 7 4}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 2 6 2 8}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 5 0 1 3}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 8 9 0 9}$ |

## Appendix B: Proofs of Results in Subsection 3.4

We use $\zeta$ and $\eta \in(0,1)$ to signify generic constants whose value may vary throughout the paper. Recall that we denote the true values of $F$ and $\beta$ by $F^{*}$ and $\beta^{*}$.

## B.1. Proof of Lemma 1.

Following the argument of Csörgö, Csörgö, Horvath and Mason (1986), Csörgö and Horvath (1993), Shao and Yu (1996), we only need to show that, for any $\epsilon>0$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\lim _{L \rightarrow \infty} \lim \sup _{n \rightarrow \infty} \operatorname{Pr}\left[\sup _{y \leq-L}\left|\frac{\mathcal{Z}_{n}(y, b)-\mathcal{Z}_{n}(y, 0)}{w\left(F^{*}(y)\right)}\right| \geq \epsilon\right]=0 \tag{.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\lim _{L \rightarrow \infty} \lim \sup _{n \rightarrow \infty} \operatorname{Pr}\left[\sup _{y \geq L}\left|\frac{\mathcal{Z}_{n}(y, b)-\mathcal{Z}_{n}(y, 0)}{w\left(F^{*}(y)\right)}\right| \geq \epsilon\right]=0 \tag{.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

We show (.1), (.2) can be proved in the same way. For a large $L$, partition $(-\infty,-L]$ into $\cup_{j=1}^{\infty}\left(y_{j}, y_{j-1}\right]$, with $F^{*}\left(y_{j}\right)=2^{-j} \delta$, where $\delta=\delta_{L}=F^{*}(-L)$, then

$$
\operatorname{Pr}\left[\sup _{y \leq-L}\left|\frac{\mathcal{Z}_{n}(y, b)-\mathcal{Z}_{n}(y, 0)}{w\left(F^{*}(y)\right)}\right| \geq \epsilon\right] \leq \sum_{j=1}^{\infty} \operatorname{Pr}\left[\sup _{y_{j}<y \leq y_{j-1}}\left|\frac{\mathcal{Z}_{n}(y, b)-\mathcal{Z}_{n}(y, 0)}{w\left(2^{-j} \delta\right)}\right| \geq \epsilon\right] .
$$

Thus, we need to show that

$$
\lim _{L \rightarrow \infty} \lim \sup _{n \rightarrow \infty} \sum_{j=1}^{\infty} \operatorname{Pr}\left[\sup _{y_{j}<y \leq y_{j-1}}\left|\mathcal{Z}_{n}(y, b)-\mathcal{Z}_{n}(y, 0)\right| \geq \epsilon w\left(2^{-j} \delta\right)\right]=0
$$

By monotonicity of the indicator function and the distribution function, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \sup _{y_{j}<y \leq y_{j-1}}\left|\mathcal{Z}_{n}(y, b)-\mathcal{Z}_{n}(y, 0)\right| \\
\leq & \left|Z_{n}\left(y_{j}, b\right)-Z_{n}\left(y_{j}, 0\right)\right|+\left|Z_{n}\left(y_{j-1}, b\right)-Z_{n}\left(y_{j-1}, 0\right)\right| \\
& +\sup _{y_{j}<y \leq y_{j-1}}\left|Z_{n}\left(y_{j-1}, 0\right)-\mathcal{Z}_{n}(y, 0)\right|+\sup _{y_{j}<y \leq y_{j-1}}\left|Z_{n}\left(y_{j}, 0\right)-\mathcal{Z}_{n}(y, 0)\right| \\
& +\frac{1}{\sqrt{n+1}} \sum_{t=1}^{n}\left[F^{*}\left(y_{j-1}+n^{-1 / 2} b_{t}\right)-F^{*}\left(y_{j}+n^{-1 / 2} b_{t}\right)\right]+\frac{1}{\sqrt{n+1}} \sum_{t=1}^{n}\left[F\left(y_{j-1}\right)-F\left(y_{j}\right)\right] .
\end{aligned}
$$

Notice that $F^{*}\left(y_{j}\right)=2^{-j} \delta$, and, under Assumption SP, for large enough $n$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \operatorname{Pr}\left[\sup _{y_{j}<y \leq y_{j-1}}\left|\mathcal{Z}_{n}(y, b)-\mathcal{Z}_{n}(y, 0)\right| \geq \epsilon w\left(2^{-j} \delta\right)\right] \\
\leq & \operatorname{Pr}\left\{\left|Z_{n}\left(y_{j}, b\right)-Z_{n}\left(y_{j}, 0\right)\right|+\left|Z_{n}\left(y_{j-1}, b\right)-Z_{n}\left(y_{j-1}, 0\right)\right|\right. \\
& +\sup _{y_{j}<y \leq y_{j-1}}\left|Z_{n}\left(y_{j-1}, 0\right)-\mathcal{Z}_{n}(y, 0)\right|+\sup _{y_{j}<y \leq y_{j-1}}\left|Z_{n}\left(y_{j}, 0\right)-\mathcal{Z}_{n}(y, 0)\right|+C \sqrt{n} 2^{-j} \delta \geq \epsilon w\left(2^{-j} \delta\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

We first consider the case when $n^{1 / 2} 2^{-j} \delta C \leq \epsilon w\left(2^{-j} \delta\right) / 2, C=8$. Let

$$
S_{1}=\left\{j: n^{1 / 2} 2^{-j} \delta C \leq \epsilon w\left(2^{-j} \delta\right) / 2\right\}
$$

if $j \in S_{1}$, then

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \operatorname{Pr}\left[\sup _{y_{j}<y \leq y_{j-1}}\left|\mathcal{Z}_{n}(y, b)-\mathcal{Z}_{n}(y, 0)\right| \geq \epsilon w\left(2^{-j} \delta\right)\right] \\
\leq & \operatorname{Pr}\left[\left|Z_{n}\left(y_{j}, b\right)-Z_{n}\left(y_{j}, 0\right)\right| \geq \frac{\epsilon w\left(2^{-j} \delta\right)}{8}\right] \\
& +\operatorname{Pr}\left[\left|Z_{n}\left(y_{j-1}, b\right)-Z_{n}\left(y_{j-1}, 0\right)\right| \geq \frac{\epsilon w\left(2^{-j} \delta\right)}{8}\right] \\
& +\operatorname{Pr}\left[\sup _{y_{j}<y \leq y_{j-1}}\left|\frac{1}{\sqrt{n+1}} \sum_{t=1}^{n}\left[1\left(Y_{t} \leq y_{j}\right)-F\left(y_{j}\right)-1\left(Y_{t} \leq y\right)+F(y)\right]\right| \geq \frac{\epsilon w\left(2^{-j} \delta\right)}{8}\right] \\
& +\operatorname{Pr}\left[\sup _{y_{j}<y \leq y_{j-1}}\left|\frac{1}{\sqrt{n+1}} \sum_{t=1}^{n}\left[1\left(Y_{t} \leq y_{j-1}\right)-F\left(y_{j-1}\right)-1\left(Y_{t} \leq y\right)+F(y)\right]\right| \geq \frac{\epsilon w\left(2^{-j} \delta\right)}{8}\right]
\end{aligned}
$$

We consider each of these terms. In particular, we show that

$$
\begin{gather*}
\lim _{L \rightarrow \infty} \lim _{\sup }^{n \rightarrow \infty} \\
\sum_{j \in S_{1}} \operatorname{Pr}\left[\left|Z_{n}\left(y_{j}, b\right)-Z_{n}\left(y_{j}, 0\right)\right| \geq \frac{\epsilon w\left(2^{-j} \delta\right)}{8}\right]=0  \tag{.4}\\
\lim _{L \rightarrow \infty} \lim \sup _{n \rightarrow \infty} \sum_{j \in S_{1}} \operatorname{Pr}\left[\sup _{y_{j}<y \leq y_{j-1}}\left|\frac{1}{\sqrt{n+1}} \sum_{t=1}^{n}\left[1\left(Y_{t} \leq y_{j}\right)-F\left(y_{j}\right)-1\left(Y_{t} \leq y\right)+F(y)\right]\right| \geq \frac{\epsilon w\left(2^{-j} \delta\right)}{8}\right]=0
\end{gather*}
$$

and analysis of the other two terms are similar.
For the first term (.3), by Chebyshev inequality,

$$
\operatorname{Pr}\left[\left|Z_{n}\left(y_{j}, b\right)-Z_{n}\left(y_{j}, 0\right)\right| \geq \frac{\epsilon w\left(2^{-j} \delta\right)}{8}\right] \leq \frac{2^{6} \mathrm{E}\left|Z_{n}\left(y_{j}, b\right)-Z_{n}\left(y_{j}, 0\right)\right|^{2}}{\epsilon^{2} w\left(2^{-j} \delta\right)^{2}}
$$

Under weak dependence of $Y_{t}$, by definition of $y_{j}$, Assumption SP, and by the inequality of Yoshihara (1976), we have:

$$
\mathrm{E}\left[\left|Z_{n}\left(y_{j}, b\right)-Z_{n}\left(y_{j}, 0\right)\right|^{2}\right] \leq \zeta\left|2^{-j+1} \delta\right|^{1 / q}
$$

for $\zeta>0, q>1$. Thus, for $1 /(2 q)>\mu$,

$$
\sum_{j \in S_{1}} \operatorname{Pr}\left[\left|Z_{n}\left(y_{j}, b\right)-Z_{n}\left(y_{j}, 0\right)\right| \geq \frac{\epsilon w\left(2^{-j} \delta\right)}{8}\right] \leq \frac{\zeta}{\epsilon^{2}}\left[\sum_{j=1}^{\infty} 2^{-j(1 / q-2 \mu)}\right] \delta^{1 / q-2 \mu} \rightarrow 0, \text { as } \delta \rightarrow 0
$$

Thus, under our assumptions,

$$
\lim _{L \rightarrow \infty} \lim \sup _{n \rightarrow \infty} \sum_{j \in S_{1}} \operatorname{Pr}\left[\left|Z_{n}\left(y_{j}, b\right)-Z_{n}\left(y_{j}, 0\right)\right| \geq \frac{\epsilon w\left(2^{-j} \delta\right)}{8}\right]=0
$$

For the second term (.4), using Billingsley (1968, eq. (22.17)),

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \operatorname{Pr}\left[\sup _{y_{j}<y \leq y_{j-1}}\left|\frac{1}{\sqrt{n+1}} \sum_{t=1}^{n}\left[1\left(Y_{t} \leq y_{j}\right)-F\left(y_{j}\right)-1\left(Y_{t} \leq y\right)+F(y)\right]\right| \geq \frac{\epsilon w\left(2^{-j} \delta\right)}{8}\right] \\
\leq & \operatorname{Pr}\left[\left|\frac{1}{\sqrt{n+1}} \sum_{t=1}^{n}\left[1\left(Y_{t} \leq y_{j}\right)-F\left(y_{j}\right)-1\left(Y_{t} \leq y_{j-1}\right)+F\left(y_{j-1}\right)\right]\right|+\sqrt{n} 2^{-j} \delta \geq \frac{\epsilon w\left(2^{-j} \delta\right)}{8}\right]
\end{aligned}
$$

Notice that $n^{1 / 2} 2^{-j} \delta \leq \epsilon w\left(2^{-j} \delta\right) / 16$, using (1) weak dependence of $Y_{t}$, (2) the Cauchy-Schwarz inequality, and (3) Yoshihara (1976), we have

$$
\operatorname{Pr}\left[\sup _{y_{j}<y \leq y_{j-1}}\left|\frac{1}{\sqrt{n+1}} \sum_{t=1}^{n}\left[1\left(Y_{t} \leq y_{j}\right)-F\left(y_{j}\right)-1\left(Y_{t} \leq y\right)+F(y)\right]\right| \geq \frac{\epsilon w\left(2^{-j} \delta\right)}{8}\right] \leq \frac{\zeta\left[2^{-j} \delta\right]^{1 / q}}{\left[\epsilon w\left(2^{-j} \delta\right)\right]^{2}},
$$

and (.4) can be proved by a similar argument as the proof of (.3).
Next we consider the case $n^{1 / 2} 2^{-j} \delta \zeta^{*} \geq \epsilon w\left(2^{-j} \delta\right) / 2$. Let

$$
S_{2}=\left\{j: n^{1 / 2} 2^{-j} \delta \zeta^{*} \geq \epsilon w\left(2^{-j} \delta\right) / 2\right\}, \quad \Delta_{n, j}=\frac{1}{8 n^{1 / 2}} \epsilon w\left(2^{-j} \delta\right) .
$$

We divide $\left(-\infty, y_{j-1}\right]$ into $\cup_{i}\left(y_{j, i}, y_{j, i+1}\right], F\left(y_{j, i}\right)=i \Delta_{n, j}, 0 \leq i \leq F\left(y_{j-1}\right) / \Delta_{n, j}=2^{-j+1} \delta / \Delta_{n, j}$, then

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \operatorname{Pr}\left[\sup _{y_{j}<y \leq y_{j-1}}\left|\mathcal{Z}_{n}(y, b)-\mathcal{Z}_{n}(y, 0)\right| \geq \epsilon w\left(2^{-j} \delta\right)\right] \\
\leq & \operatorname{Pr}\left[\max _{0 \leq i \leq F\left(y_{j-1}\right) / \Delta_{n, j}} \sup _{y_{j, i}<y \leq y_{j, i+1}}\left|\mathcal{Z}_{n}(y, b)-\mathcal{Z}_{n}(y, 0)\right| \geq \epsilon w\left(2^{-j} \delta\right)\right] .
\end{aligned}
$$

Notice that

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \sup _{y_{j, i}<y \leq y_{j, i+1}}\left|\mathcal{Z}_{n}(y, b)-\mathcal{Z}_{n}(y, 0)\right| \\
\leq & \left|\mathcal{Z}_{n}\left(y_{j, i}, b\right)-\mathcal{Z}_{n}\left(y_{j, i}, 0\right)\right|+\left|\mathcal{Z}_{n}\left(y_{j, i+1}, b\right)-\mathcal{Z}_{n}\left(y_{j, i+1}, 0\right)\right| \\
& +\sup _{y_{j, i}<y \leq y_{j, i+1}}\left|\mathcal{Z}_{n}\left(y_{j, i}, 0\right)-\mathcal{Z}_{n}(y, 0)\right|+\sup _{y_{j, i}<y \leq y_{j, i+1}}\left|\mathcal{Z}_{n}\left(y_{j, i+1}, 0\right)-\mathcal{Z}_{n}(y, 0)\right| \\
& +\frac{1}{\sqrt{n+1}} \sum_{t=1}^{n}\left[F^{*}\left(y_{j, i+1}+n^{-1 / 2} b_{t}\right)-F^{*}\left(y_{j, i}+n^{-1 / 2} b_{t}\right)\right]+\frac{1}{\sqrt{n+1}} \sum_{t=1}^{n}\left[F\left(y_{j, i+1}\right)-F\left(y_{j, i}\right)\right],
\end{aligned}
$$

by definition $F\left(y_{j, i}\right)=i \Delta_{n, j}$, under Assumption SP, for large $n$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \sup _{y_{j}<y \leq y_{j, i+1}}\left|\mathcal{Z}_{n}(y, b)-\mathcal{Z}_{n}(y, 0)\right| \\
\leq & \left|\mathcal{Z}_{n}\left(y_{j, i}, b\right)-\mathcal{Z}_{n}\left(y_{j, i}, 0\right)\right|+\left|\mathcal{Z}_{n}\left(y_{j, i+1}, b\right)-\mathcal{Z}_{n}\left(y_{j, i+1}, 0\right)\right| \\
& +\sup _{y_{j, i}<y \leq y_{j, i+1}}\left|\mathcal{Z}_{n}\left(y_{j, i}, 0\right)-\mathcal{Z}_{n}(y, 0)\right|+\sup _{y_{j, i}<y \leq y_{j, i+1}}\left|\mathcal{Z}_{n}\left(y_{j, i+1}, 0\right)-\mathcal{Z}_{n}(y, 0)\right|+\frac{1}{4} \epsilon w\left(2^{-j} \delta\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

and thus

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \operatorname{Pr}\left[\sup _{y_{j}<y \leq y_{j-1}}\left|\mathcal{Z}_{n}(y, b)-\mathcal{Z}_{n}(y, 0)\right| \geq \epsilon w\left(2^{-j} \delta\right)\right] \\
\leq & \operatorname{Pr}\left[\max _{0 \leq i \leq F\left(y_{j-1}\right) / \Delta_{n, j}}\left|\mathcal{Z}_{n}\left(y_{j, i}, b\right)-\mathcal{Z}_{n}\left(y_{j, i}, 0\right)\right| \geq \frac{3 \epsilon w\left(2^{-j} \delta\right)}{16}\right] \\
& +\operatorname{Pr}\left[\max _{0 \leq i \leq F\left(y_{j-1}\right) / \Delta_{n, j}}\left|\mathcal{Z}_{n}\left(y_{j, i+1}, b\right)-\mathcal{Z}_{n}\left(y_{j, i+1}, 0\right)\right| \geq \frac{3 \epsilon w\left(2^{-j} \delta\right)}{16}\right] \\
& +\operatorname{Pr}\left[\max _{0 \leq i \leq F\left(y_{j-1}\right) / \Delta_{n, j}} \sup _{y_{j, i}<y \leq y_{j, i+1}}\left|\mathcal{Z}_{n}\left(y_{j, i}, 0\right)-\mathcal{Z}_{n}(y, 0)\right| \geq \frac{3 \epsilon w\left(2^{-j} \delta\right)}{16}\right] \\
& +\operatorname{Pr}\left[\max _{0 \leq i \leq F\left(y_{j-1}\right) / \Delta_{n, j}} \sup _{y_{j, i}<y \leq y_{j, i+1}}\left|\mathcal{Z}_{n}\left(y_{j, i+1}, 0\right)-\mathcal{Z}_{n}(y, 0)\right| \geq \frac{3 \epsilon w\left(2^{-j} \delta\right)}{16}\right]
\end{aligned}
$$

By Billingsley (1968, eq. (22.17)) again,

$$
\sup _{y_{j, i}<y \leq y_{j, i+1}}\left|\mathcal{Z}_{n}\left(y_{j, i}, 0\right)-\mathcal{Z}_{n}(y, 0)\right| \leq\left|\mathcal{Z}_{n}\left(y_{j, i+1}, 0\right)-\mathcal{Z}_{n}\left(y_{j, i}, 0\right)\right|+\frac{1}{8} \epsilon w\left(2^{-j} \delta\right),
$$

thus

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \operatorname{Pr}\left[\sup _{y_{j}<y \leq y_{j-1}}\left|\mathcal{Z}_{n}(y, b)-\mathcal{Z}_{n}(y, 0)\right| \geq \epsilon w\left(2^{-j} \delta\right)\right] \\
\leq & \operatorname{Pr}\left[\max _{0 \leq i \leq F\left(y_{j-1}\right) / \Delta_{n, j}}\left|\mathcal{Z}_{n}\left(y_{j, i}, b\right)-\mathcal{Z}_{n}\left(y_{j, i}, 0\right)\right| \geq \frac{3 \epsilon w\left(2^{-j} \delta\right)}{16}\right] \\
& +\operatorname{Pr}\left[\max _{0 \leq i \leq F\left(y_{j-1}\right) / \Delta_{n, j}}\left|\mathcal{Z}_{n}\left(y_{j, i+1}, b\right)-\mathcal{Z}_{n}\left(y_{j, i+1}, 0\right)\right| \geq \frac{3 \epsilon w\left(2^{-j} \delta\right)}{16}\right] \\
& +\operatorname{Pr}\left[\max _{0 \leq i \leq F\left(y_{j-1}\right) / \Delta_{n, j}}\left|\mathcal{Z}_{n}\left(y_{j, i+1}, 0\right)-\mathcal{Z}_{n}\left(y_{j, i}, 0\right)\right| \geq \frac{\epsilon w\left(2^{-j} \delta\right)}{16}\right] \\
& +\operatorname{Pr}\left[\max _{0 \leq i \leq F\left(y_{j-1}\right) / \Delta_{n, j}}\left|\mathcal{Z}_{n}\left(y_{j, i+1}, 0\right)-\mathcal{Z}_{n}\left(y_{j, i}, 0\right)\right| \geq \frac{\epsilon w\left(2^{-j} \delta\right)}{16}\right]
\end{aligned}
$$

We next show that

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \lim _{L \rightarrow \infty} \lim \sup _{n \rightarrow \infty} \sum_{j \in S_{2}} \operatorname{Pr}\left[\max _{0 \leq i \leq F\left(y_{j-1}\right) / \Delta_{n, j}}\left|\mathcal{Z}_{n}\left(y_{j, i}, b\right)-\mathcal{Z}_{n}\left(y_{j, i}, 0\right)\right| \geq \frac{3 \epsilon w\left(2^{-j} \delta\right)}{16}\right]=0 \\
& \lim _{L \rightarrow \infty} \lim \sup _{n \rightarrow \infty} \sum_{j \in S_{2}} \operatorname{Pr}\left[\max _{0 \leq i \leq F\left(y_{j-1}\right) / \Delta_{n, j}}\left|\mathcal{Z}_{n}\left(y_{j, i+1}, b\right)-\mathcal{Z}_{n}\left(y_{j, i+1}, 0\right)\right| \geq \frac{3 \epsilon w\left(2^{-j} \delta\right)}{16}\right]=0 \\
& \lim _{L \rightarrow \infty} \lim \sup _{n \rightarrow \infty} \sum_{j \in S_{2}} \operatorname{Pr}\left[\max _{0 \leq i \leq F\left(y_{j-1}\right) / \Delta_{n, j}}\left|\mathcal{Z}_{n}\left(y_{j, i+1}, 0\right)-\mathcal{Z}_{n}\left(y_{j, i}, 0\right)\right| \geq \frac{\epsilon w\left(2^{-j} \delta\right)}{16}\right]=0 \\
& \lim _{L \rightarrow \infty} \lim \sup _{n \rightarrow \infty} \sum_{j \in S_{2}} \operatorname{Pr}\left[\max _{0 \leq i \leq F\left(y_{j-1}\right) / \Delta_{n, j}}\left|\mathcal{Z}_{n}\left(y_{j, i+1}, 0\right)-\mathcal{Z}_{n}\left(y_{j, i}, 0\right)\right| \geq \frac{\epsilon w\left(2^{-j} \delta\right)}{16}\right]=0
\end{aligned}
$$

We use the maximum inequality of Moricz (1982) to bound

$$
\mathrm{E} \max _{1 \leq i \leq F\left(y_{j-1}\right) / \Delta_{n, j}}\left|\mathcal{Z}_{n}\left(y_{j, i}, b\right)-\mathcal{Z}_{n}\left(y_{j, i}, 0\right)\right|^{p}
$$

and $\operatorname{Emax}_{1 \leq i \leq F\left(y_{j-1}\right) / \Delta_{n, j}}\left|\mathcal{Z}_{n}\left(y_{j, i}, 0\right)\right|^{p}$. First,

$$
\mathrm{E}\left|\mathcal{Z}_{n}\left(y_{j, k}, b\right)-\mathcal{Z}_{n}\left(y_{j, k}, 0\right)-\mathcal{Z}_{n}\left(y_{j, i}, b\right)-\mathcal{Z}_{n}\left(y_{j, i}, 0\right)\right|^{2} \leq \zeta(k-i) \Delta_{n, j} .
$$

Next, by Viennet (1997), we obtain a Rosenthal-type inequality for

$$
\mathrm{E}\left|\mathcal{Z}_{n}\left(y_{j, k}, b\right)-\mathcal{Z}_{n}\left(y_{j, k}, 0\right)-\mathcal{Z}_{n}\left(y_{j, i}, b\right)-\mathcal{Z}_{n}\left(y_{j, i}, 0\right)\right|^{p}
$$

For $0 \leq i<k \leq 2^{-j+1} \delta / \Delta_{n, j}$, let

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \psi_{t}(j, k, i) \\
= & 1\left(Y_{t} \leq y_{j, k}+n^{-1 / 2} b_{t}\right)-1\left(Y_{t} \leq y_{j, k}\right)+F^{*}\left(y_{j, k}\right)-F^{*}\left(y_{j, k}+n^{-1 / 2} b_{t}\right) \\
& -1\left(Y_{t} \leq y_{j, i}+n^{-1 / 2} b_{t}\right)+1\left(Y_{t} \leq y_{j, i}\right)-F^{*}\left(y_{j, i}\right)+F^{*}\left(y_{j, i}+n^{-1 / 2} b_{t}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

Notice that $\psi_{t}(j, k, i)$ is a bounded function, by Theorem 2 of Viennet (1997), and application of Moricz (1982), we have

$$
\mathrm{E}\left[\max _{1 \leq i \leq F\left(y_{j-1}\right) / \Delta_{n, j}}\left|\mathcal{Z}_{n}\left(y_{j, i}, b\right)-\mathcal{Z}_{n}\left(y_{j, i}, 0\right)\right|\right]^{p} \leq \zeta_{3}\left(2^{-j} \delta\right)^{p_{1}}+\zeta_{4} n^{-p_{2} / 2} 2^{-j} \delta \log ^{p}\left(2^{-j+2} \delta / \Delta_{n, j}\right)
$$

where $p_{1}=p / 2, p_{2}=p-2$, and thus

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \operatorname{Pr}\left[\max _{0 \leq i \leq F\left(y_{j-1}\right) / \Delta_{n, j}}\left|\mathcal{Z}_{n}\left(y_{j, i}, b\right)-\mathcal{Z}_{n}\left(y_{j, i}, 0\right)\right| \geq \frac{3 \epsilon w\left(2^{-j} \delta\right)}{16}\right] \\
\leq & \frac{\zeta_{3}\left(2^{-j} \delta\right)^{p_{1}}+\zeta_{4} n^{-p_{2} / 2} 2^{-j} \delta \log ^{p}\left(2^{-j+2} \delta / \Delta_{n, j}\right)}{\left[\epsilon w\left(2^{-j} \delta\right)\right]^{p}}
\end{aligned}
$$

Notice that $\Delta_{n, j}=2^{-3} n^{-1 / 2} \epsilon w\left(2^{-j} \delta\right)$, and $n^{1 / 2} 2^{-j} \delta \zeta^{*} \geq \epsilon w\left(2^{-j} \delta\right) / 2$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \operatorname{Pr}\left[\max _{0 \leq i \leq F\left(y_{j-1}\right) / \Delta_{n, j}}\left|\mathcal{Z}_{n}\left(y_{j, i}, b\right)-\mathcal{Z}_{n}\left(y_{j, i}, 0\right)\right| \geq \frac{3 \epsilon w\left(2^{-j} \delta\right)}{16}\right] \\
\leq & \zeta\left[\epsilon w\left(2^{-j} \delta\right) / 8\right]^{-p}\left[\left(2^{-j} \delta\right)^{p_{1}}+\left(\epsilon w\left(2^{-j} \delta\right)\right)^{-p_{2}}\left(\delta 2^{-j}\right)^{\left(1+p_{2}\right)} \log ^{p}\left(\frac{n^{1 / 2} \cdot 2^{-j+5} \delta}{\epsilon w\left(2^{-j} \delta\right)}\right)\right]
\end{aligned}
$$

Under Assumption SP, we have

$$
\lim _{L \rightarrow \infty} \lim \sup _{n \rightarrow \infty} \sum_{j \in S_{2}} \operatorname{Pr}\left[\max _{0 \leq i \leq F\left(y_{j-1}\right) / \Delta_{n, j}}\left|\mathcal{Z}_{n}\left(y_{j, i}, b\right)-\mathcal{Z}_{n}\left(y_{j, i}, 0\right)\right| \geq \frac{3 \epsilon w\left(2^{-j} \delta\right)}{16}\right]=0
$$

Notice that,

$$
\operatorname{Pr}\left[\max _{0 \leq i \leq F\left(y_{j-1}\right) / \Delta_{n, j}}\left|\mathcal{Z}_{n}\left(y_{j, i+1}, 0\right)-\mathcal{Z}_{n}\left(y_{j, i}, 0\right)\right| \geq \frac{\epsilon w\left(2^{-j} \delta\right)}{16}\right] \leq \zeta \frac{\operatorname{Emax}_{1 \leq i \leq F\left(y_{j-1}\right) / \Delta_{n, j}}\left|\mathcal{Z}_{n}\left(y_{j, i}, 0\right)\right|^{p}}{\left[\epsilon w\left(2^{-j} \delta\right)\right]^{p}} .
$$

The proofs of other terms are similar.

## B.2. Proof of Theorem 3.

Notice that

$$
\sqrt{n+1}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}(y)-F^{*}(y)\right)=\sqrt{n+1}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}(y)-F_{n}(y)\right)+\sqrt{n+1}\left(F_{n}(y)-F^{*}(y)\right)
$$

The first term, $\sqrt{n+1}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}(y)-F_{n}(y)\right)$, captures the preliminary filtering effect, and the second term, $\sqrt{n+1}\left(F_{n}(y)-F^{*}(y)\right)$, captures the effect of marginal estimation.

Let $Y_{t}(\gamma)=Y_{t}-n^{-1 / 2}\left(X_{t}^{\prime} D_{n}^{-1} n^{1 / 2}\right) \gamma$, and $F_{n, \gamma}(y)=\frac{1}{n+1} \sum_{t=1}^{n} 1\left(Y_{t}(\gamma) \leq y\right)$. By Lemma 1 and differentiability (and a Taylor expansion) of $F^{*}$, we have that, for $\gamma$ in an arbitrary compact set $\Gamma$ of $R^{k}$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sup _{\gamma \in \Gamma} \sup _{y}\left|\left\{\sqrt{n+1}\left(F_{n, \gamma}(y)-F_{n}(y)\right)-f^{*}(y)\left[\frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=1}^{n} X_{t}^{\prime} D_{n}^{-1} n^{1 / 2}\right] \gamma\right\} / w\left(F^{*}(y)\right)\right|=o_{p}(1) . \tag{.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

Notice that $\widehat{\gamma}=D_{n}\left(\widehat{\pi}-\pi^{*}\right)$, we have $\widehat{F}_{n}(y)=F_{n, \widehat{\gamma}}(y)=\frac{1}{n+1} \sum_{t=1}^{n} 1\left(Y_{t}(\widehat{\gamma}) \leq y\right)$. By (.5), we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sup _{y}\left|\left\{\sqrt{n+1}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}(y)-F_{n}(y)\right)-f^{*}(y)\left[\frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=1}^{n} X_{t}^{\prime} D_{n}^{-1} n^{1 / 2}\right] D_{n}\left(\widehat{\pi}-\pi^{*}\right)\right\} / w\left(F^{*}(y)\right)\right|=o_{p}(1) . \tag{.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let

$$
s(F, \beta)=\mathrm{E}\left[\frac{\partial \log c\left(F\left(Y_{t-1}\right), F\left(Y_{t}\right), \beta\right)}{\partial \beta}\right]
$$

Under our assumptions, the consistency of $\widehat{\beta}_{S P}$ can be obtained if

$$
\sup _{\beta \in \mathfrak{B}}\left\|\frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=2}^{n} \frac{\partial \log c\left(\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t-1}\right), \widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t}\right), \beta\right)}{\partial \beta^{\prime}}-s\left(F^{*}, \beta\right)\right\|=o_{p}(1)
$$

By triangular inequality,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \sup _{\beta \in \mathfrak{B}}\left\|\frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=2}^{n} \frac{\partial \log c\left(\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t-1}\right), \widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t}\right), \beta\right)}{\partial \beta^{\prime}}-s\left(F^{*}, \beta\right)\right\| \\
\leq & \sup _{\beta \in \mathfrak{B}}\left\|\frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=2}^{n}\left[\frac{\partial \log c\left(\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t-1}\right), \widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t}\right), \beta\right)}{\partial \beta^{\prime}}-\frac{\partial \log c\left(F^{*}\left(Y_{t-1}\right), F^{*}\left(Y_{t}\right), \beta\right)}{\partial \beta^{\prime}}\right]\right\| \\
& +\sup _{\beta \in \mathfrak{B}}\left\|\frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=2}^{n} \frac{\partial \log c\left(F^{*}\left(Y_{t-1}\right), F^{*}\left(Y_{t}\right), \beta\right)}{\partial \beta^{\prime}}-s\left(F^{*}, \beta\right)\right\| .
\end{aligned}
$$

By Chen and Fan (2006a),

$$
\sup _{\beta \in \mathfrak{B}}\left\|\frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=2}^{n} \frac{\partial \log c\left(F^{*}\left(Y_{t-1}\right), F^{*}\left(Y_{t}\right), \beta\right)}{\partial \beta^{\prime}}-s\left(F^{*}, \beta\right)\right\|=o_{p}(1) .
$$

Next we verify that

$$
\sup _{\beta \in \mathfrak{B}}\left\|\frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=2}^{n}\left[\frac{\partial \log c\left(\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t-1}\right), \widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t}\right), \beta\right)}{\partial \beta^{\prime}}-\frac{\partial \log c\left(F^{*}\left(Y_{t-1}\right), F^{*}\left(Y_{t}\right), \beta\right)}{\partial \beta^{\prime}}\right]\right\|=o_{p}(1)
$$

Note that

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \sup _{\beta \in \mathfrak{B}}\left\|\frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=2}^{n}\left[\frac{\partial \log c\left(\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t-1}\right), \widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t}\right), \beta\right)}{\partial \beta^{\prime}}-\frac{\partial \log c\left(F^{*}\left(Y_{t-1}\right), F^{*}\left(Y_{t}\right), \beta\right)}{\partial \beta^{\prime}}\right]\right\| \\
\leq & \sup _{\beta \in \mathfrak{B}}\left\|\frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=2}^{n} \ell_{\beta 1}\left(F_{t-1}^{\eta}, F_{t}^{\eta}, \beta\right)\left(\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t-1}\right)-F_{n}\left(Y_{t-1}\right)\right)\right\| \\
& +\sup _{\beta \in \mathfrak{B}}\left\|\frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=2}^{n} \ell_{\beta 2}\left(F_{t-1}^{\eta}, F_{t}^{\eta}, \beta\right)\left(\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t}\right)-F_{n}\left(Y_{t}\right)\right)\right\| \\
& +\sup _{\beta \in \mathfrak{B}}\left\|\frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=2}^{n} \ell_{\beta 1}\left(F_{t-1}^{\eta}, F_{t}^{\eta}, \beta\right)\left(F_{n}\left(Y_{t-1}\right)-F^{*}\left(Y_{t-1}\right)\right)\right\| \\
& +\sup _{\beta \in \mathfrak{B}}\left\|\frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=2}^{n} \ell_{\beta 2}\left(F_{t-1}^{\eta}, F_{t}^{\eta}, \beta\right)\left(F_{n}\left(Y_{t}\right)-F^{*}\left(Y_{t}\right)\right)\right\|
\end{aligned}
$$

where $F_{s}^{\eta}=\eta \widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{s}\right)+(1-\eta) F^{*}\left(Y_{s}\right), s=t-1$ or $t, \eta \in(0,1)$.

We can show that the third and fourth terms are $o_{p}(1)$ using a similar argument as Chen and Fan (2006a). We next show that the first two terms are $o_{p}(1)$. Notice that

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \sup _{\beta \in \mathfrak{B}} \left\lvert\, \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=2}^{n} \ell_{\beta 2}\left(F_{t-1}^{\eta}, F_{t}^{\eta}, \beta\right)\left[\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t}\right)-F_{n}\left(Y_{t}\right)\right]\right. \| \\
\leq & \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=2}^{n} \sup _{\beta \in \mathfrak{B}, F \in \mathcal{F}_{\delta}}\left|\ell_{\beta 2}\left(F\left(Y_{t-1}\right), F\left(Y_{t}\right), \beta\right) w\left(F^{*}\left(Y_{t}\right)\right)\right| \sup _{t}\left|\frac{\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t}\right)-F_{n}\left(Y_{t}\right)}{w\left(F^{*}\left(Y_{t}\right)\right)}\right|
\end{aligned}
$$

By (.6), we have

$$
\sup _{t}\left|\frac{\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t}\right)-F_{n}\left(Y_{t}\right)}{w\left(F^{*}\left(Y_{t}\right)\right)}\right|=O_{p}\left(n^{-1 / 2}\right)
$$

together with Assumption M4, we obtain

$$
\sup _{\beta \in \mathfrak{B}}\left\|\frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=2}^{n}\left[\frac{\partial \log c\left(\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t-1}\right), \widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t}\right), \beta\right)}{\partial \beta^{\prime}}-\frac{\partial \log c\left(F^{*}\left(Y_{t-1}\right), F^{*}\left(Y_{t}\right), \beta\right)}{\partial \beta^{\prime}}\right]\right\|=o_{p}(1) .
$$

The consistency now follows from Assumptions MX, ID3 and M3(1).

## B.3. Proof of Theorem 4.

A Taylor expansion of $\ell_{\beta}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t-1}\right), \widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t}\right), \widehat{\beta}_{S P}\right)$ w.r.t $\beta$ around $\beta^{*}$ gives

$$
\begin{aligned}
0 & =\frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=2}^{n} \ell_{\beta}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t-1}\right), \widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t}\right), \widehat{\beta}_{S P}\right) \\
& =\frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=2}^{n} \ell_{\beta}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t-1}\right), \widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t}\right), \beta^{*}\right)+\frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=2}^{n} \ell_{\beta \beta}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t-1}\right), \widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t}\right), \stackrel{\beta}{\beta}\right)\left(\widehat{\beta}_{S P}-\beta^{*}\right),
\end{aligned}
$$

where $\stackrel{\circ}{\beta}$ is a middle value between $\widehat{\beta}_{S P}$ and $\beta^{*}$, and $\widehat{\beta}_{S P}$ is a consistent estimator of $\beta^{*}$.
Expanding $\ell_{\beta}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t-1}\right), \widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t}\right), \beta^{*}\right)$ around $\left(F^{*}\left(Y_{t-1}\right), F^{*}\left(Y_{t}\right)\right)$, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \frac{1}{\sqrt{n}} \sum_{t=2}^{n} \ell_{\beta}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t-1}\right), \widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t}\right), \beta^{*}\right) \\
= & \frac{1}{\sqrt{n}} \sum_{t=2}^{n} \ell_{\beta}\left(F^{*}\left(Y_{t-1}\right), F^{*}\left(Y_{t}\right), \beta^{*}\right) \\
& +\frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=2}^{n} \ell_{\beta 1}\left(F^{*}\left(Y_{t-1}\right), F^{*}\left(Y_{t}\right), \beta^{*}\right) \sqrt{n}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t-1}\right)-F^{*}\left(Y_{t-1}\right)\right) \\
& +\frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=2}^{n} \ell_{\beta 2}\left(F^{*}\left(Y_{t-1}\right), F^{*}\left(Y_{t}\right), \beta^{*}\right) \sqrt{n}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t}\right)-F^{*}\left(Y_{t}\right)\right) \\
& +\frac{1}{n^{3 / 2}} \sum_{i, j=1}^{2} \sum_{t=2}^{n} \ell_{\beta i j}\left(F_{t-1}^{\eta}, F_{t}^{\eta}, \beta^{*}\right)\left[\sqrt{n}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t+i-2}\right)-F^{*}\left(Y_{t+i-2}\right)\right)\right]\left[\sqrt{n}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t+j-2}\right)-F^{*}\left(Y_{t+j-2}\right)\right)\right]
\end{aligned}
$$

where $F_{s}^{\eta}=\eta \widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{s}\right)+(1-\eta) F^{*}\left(Y_{s}\right), \eta \in(0,1)$.
First, for $i=1,2, j=1,2$,

$$
\frac{1}{n^{3 / 2}} \sum_{t=2}^{n} \ell_{\beta i j}\left(F_{t-1}^{\eta}, F_{t}^{\eta}, \beta^{*}\right)\left[\sqrt{n}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t+i-2}\right)-F^{*}\left(Y_{t+i-2}\right)\right)\right]\left[\sqrt{n}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t+j-2}\right)-F^{*}\left(Y_{t+j-2}\right)\right)\right]=o_{p}(1)
$$

Consider, for example, the case $i=1, j=2$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left|\frac{1}{n^{3 / 2}} \sum_{t=2}^{n} \ell_{\beta 12}\left(F_{t-1}^{\eta}, F_{t}^{\eta}, \beta^{*}\right)\left[\sqrt{n}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t-1}\right)-F^{*}\left(Y_{t-1}\right)\right)\right]\left[\sqrt{n}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t}\right)-F^{*}\left(Y_{t}\right)\right)\right]\right| \\
\leq & \frac{1}{n^{3 / 2}} \sum_{t=2}^{n} \sup _{\left\|\beta-\beta^{*}\right\| \leq \delta, F \in \mathcal{F}_{\delta}}\left|\ell_{\beta 12}\left(F\left(Y_{t-1}\right), F\left(Y_{t}\right), \beta^{*}\right) w\left(F^{*}\left(Y_{t-1}\right)\right) w\left(F^{*}\left(Y_{t}\right)\right)\right| \\
& \times\left|\frac{\sqrt{n}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t-1}\right)-F^{*}\left(Y_{t-1}\right)\right)}{w\left(F^{*}\left(Y_{t-1}\right)\right)}\right|\left|\frac{\sqrt{n}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t}\right)-F^{*}\left(Y_{t}\right)\right)}{w\left(F^{*}\left(Y_{t}\right)\right)}\right|
\end{aligned}
$$

Under Assumption M4,

$$
\frac{1}{n^{3 / 2}} \sum_{t=2}^{n} \sup _{\left\|\beta-\beta^{*}\right\| \leq \delta, F \in \mathcal{F}_{\delta}}\left|\ell_{\beta 12}\left(F\left(Y_{t-1}\right), F\left(Y_{t}\right), \beta^{*}\right) w\left(F^{*}\left(Y_{t-1}\right)\right) w\left(F^{*}\left(Y_{t}\right)\right)\right|=o_{p}(1),
$$

and by application of Lemma 1,

$$
\sup _{t}\left|\frac{\sqrt{n}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t-1}\right)-F^{*}\left(Y_{t-1}\right)\right)}{w\left(F^{*}\left(Y_{t-1}\right)\right)}\right|=O_{p}(1), \sup _{t}\left|\frac{\sqrt{n}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t}\right)-F^{*}\left(Y_{t}\right)\right)}{w\left(F^{*}\left(Y_{t}\right)\right)}\right|=O_{p}(1)
$$

thus

$$
\left|\frac{1}{n^{3 / 2}} \sum_{t=2}^{n} \ell_{\beta 12}\left(F_{t-1}^{\eta}, F_{t}^{\eta}, \beta^{*}\right)\left[\sqrt{n}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t-1}\right)-F^{*}\left(Y_{t-1}\right)\right)\right]\left[\sqrt{n}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t}\right)-F^{*}\left(Y_{t}\right)\right)\right]\right|=o_{p}(1)
$$

Second, by Taylor expansion,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=2}^{n} \ell_{\beta \beta}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t-1}\right), \widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t}\right), \stackrel{\circ}{\beta}\right)-\frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=2}^{n} \ell_{\beta \beta}\left(F^{*}\left(Y_{t-1}\right), F^{*}\left(Y_{t}\right), \beta^{*}\right) \\
= & \frac{1}{n^{3 / 2}} \sum_{j=1}^{2} \sum_{t=2}^{n} \ell_{\beta \beta j}\left(F_{t-1}^{\eta}, F_{t}^{\eta}, \overline{\bar{\beta}}\right) \sqrt{n}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t+j-2}\right)-F^{*}\left(Y_{t+j-2}\right)\right) \\
& +\frac{1}{n^{3 / 2}} \sum_{t=2}^{n} \ell_{\beta \beta \beta}\left(F_{t-1}^{\eta}, F_{t}^{\eta}, \overline{\bar{\beta}}\right) \sqrt{n}(\stackrel{\circ}{\beta}-\beta),
\end{aligned}
$$

where $\overline{\bar{\beta}}=\eta \beta^{*}+(1-\eta) \dot{\beta}$. Thus, by Assumptions M4, SP, and Lemma 1,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left\|\frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=2}^{n}\left[\ell_{\beta \beta}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t-1}\right), \widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t}\right), \stackrel{\circ}{\beta}\right)-\ell_{\beta \beta}\left(F^{*}\left(Y_{t-1}\right), F^{*}\left(Y_{t}\right), \beta^{*}\right)\right]\right\| \\
\leq & \frac{1}{n^{3 / 2}} \sum_{j=1}^{2} \sum_{t=2}^{n} \sup _{\left\|\beta-\beta^{*}\right\| \leq \delta, F \in \mathcal{F}_{\delta}}\left\|\ell_{\beta \beta j}\left(F\left(Y_{t-1}\right), F\left(Y_{t}\right), \beta\right) w\left(F^{*}\left(Y_{t+j-2}\right)\right)\right\| \\
& \times\left|\frac{\sqrt{n}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t+j-2}\right)-F^{*}\left(Y_{t+j-2}\right)\right)}{w\left(F^{*}\left(Y_{t+j-2}\right)\right)}\right| \\
& +\frac{1}{n^{3 / 2}} \sum_{t=2}^{n} \sup _{\left\|\beta-\beta^{*}\right\| \leq \delta, F \in \mathcal{F}_{\delta}}\left\|\ell_{\beta \beta \beta}\left(F\left(Y_{t-1}\right), F\left(Y_{t}\right), \beta\right)\right\|\left\|\sqrt{n}\left(\stackrel{\circ}{\beta}-\beta^{*}\right)\right\| \\
= & o_{p}(1) .
\end{aligned}
$$

Thus,

$$
\frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=2}^{n} \ell_{\beta \beta}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t-1}\right), \widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t}\right), \stackrel{\circ}{\beta}\right)=\frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=2}^{n} \ell_{\beta \beta}\left(F^{*}\left(Y_{t-1}\right), F^{*}\left(Y_{t}\right), \beta^{*}\right)+o_{p}(1)
$$

Let

$$
\begin{aligned}
& A_{n 1}=\frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=2}^{n} \ell_{\beta 1}\left(F^{*}\left(Y_{t-1}\right), F^{*}\left(Y_{t}\right), \beta^{*}\right) \sqrt{n}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t-1}\right)-F_{n}\left(Y_{t-1}\right)\right), \\
& A_{n 2}=\frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=2}^{n} \ell_{\beta 1}\left(F^{*}\left(Y_{t-1}\right), F^{*}\left(Y_{t}\right), \beta^{*}\right) \sqrt{n}\left(F_{n}\left(Y_{t-1}\right)-F^{*}\left(Y_{t-1}\right)\right), \\
& A_{n 3}=\frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=2}^{n} \ell_{\beta 2}\left(F^{*}\left(Y_{t-1}\right), F^{*}\left(Y_{t}\right), \beta^{*}\right) \sqrt{n}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t}\right)-F_{n}\left(Y_{t}\right)\right), \\
& A_{n 4}=\frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=2}^{n} \ell_{\beta 2}\left(F^{*}\left(Y_{t-1}\right), F^{*}\left(Y_{t}\right), \beta^{*}\right) \sqrt{n}\left(F_{n}\left(Y_{t}\right)-F^{*}\left(Y_{t}\right)\right),
\end{aligned}
$$

and

$$
\Sigma_{n}=-\left[\frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=2}^{n} \ell_{\beta \beta}\left(F^{*}\left(Y_{t-1}\right), F^{*}\left(Y_{t}\right), \beta^{*}\right)\right], S_{n}=\frac{1}{\sqrt{n}} \sum_{t=2}^{n} \ell_{\beta}\left(F^{*}\left(Y_{t-1}\right), F^{*}\left(Y_{t}\right), \beta^{*}\right)
$$

then we have

$$
\Sigma_{n} \sqrt{n}\left(\widehat{\beta}_{S P}-\beta^{*}\right)=S_{n}+A_{n 1}+A_{n 2}+A_{n 3}+A_{n 4}+o_{p}(1)
$$

where $A_{n 2}+A_{n 4}$ is the effect of estimating $F^{*}(\cdot)$ based on $Y_{t}$ (unobserved), and $A_{n 1}+A_{n 3}$ is the effect of filtration. Thus, the first part

$$
S_{n}+A_{n 2}+A_{n 4}
$$

is the leading part of the infeasible estimator based on knowledge of $Y_{t}^{\prime} s$, and the effect of filtration is captured by $A_{n 1}$ and $A_{n 3}$.

The analysis of $A_{n 1}$ and $A_{n 3}$ are similar, we illustrate our proof for $A_{n 3}$. Notice that

$$
\begin{aligned}
& A_{n 3}=\frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=2}^{n} \ell_{\beta 2}\left(F^{*}\left(Y_{t-1}\right), F^{*}\left(Y_{t}\right), \beta^{*}\right) \sqrt{n}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t}\right)-F_{n}\left(Y_{t}\right)\right) \\
= & -\frac{1}{n^{2}} \sum_{t=2}^{n} \sum_{j=2}^{n} \ell_{\beta 2}\left(F^{*}\left(Y_{t-1}\right), F^{*}\left(Y_{t}\right), \beta^{*}\right) f^{*}\left(Y_{t}\right)\left[\left(X_{j}-X_{t}\right)^{\prime} D_{n}^{-1} n^{1 / 2}\right] D_{n}\left(\widehat{\pi}-\pi^{*}\right)+o_{p}(1) .
\end{aligned}
$$

and

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \frac{1}{n^{2}} \sum_{t=2}^{n} \sum_{j=2}^{n} \ell_{\beta 2}\left(F^{*}\left(Y_{t-1}\right), F^{*}\left(Y_{t}\right), \beta^{*}\right) f^{*}\left(Y_{t}\right)\left[\left(X_{j}-X_{t}\right)^{\prime} D_{n}^{-1} n^{1 / 2}\right] \\
= & \frac{1}{n^{2}} \sum_{t>j} \sum_{\beta 2}\left(F^{*}\left(Y_{j-1}\right), F^{*}\left(Y_{j}\right), \beta^{*}\right) f^{*}\left(Y_{j}\right)\left[X_{t}^{\prime} D_{n}^{-1} n^{1 / 2}\right] \\
& +\frac{1}{n^{2}} \sum_{t>j} \sum_{\beta 2} \ell_{\beta}\left(F^{*}\left(Y_{t-1}\right), F^{*}\left(Y_{t}\right), \beta^{*}\right) f^{*}\left(Y_{t}\right)\left[X_{j}^{\prime} D_{n}^{-1} n^{1 / 2}\right] \\
& -\frac{1}{n^{2}} \sum_{t>j} \sum_{\beta 2}\left(F^{*}\left(Y_{t-1}\right), F^{*}\left(Y_{t}\right), \beta^{*}\right) f^{*}\left(Y_{t}\right)\left[X_{t}^{\prime} D_{n}^{-1} n^{1 / 2}\right] \\
& -\frac{1}{n^{2}} \sum_{t>j} \sum_{\beta 2} \ell_{\beta 2}\left(F^{*}\left(Y_{j-1}\right), F^{*}\left(Y_{j}\right), \beta^{*}\right) f^{*}\left(Y_{j}\right)\left[X_{j}^{\prime} D_{n}^{-1} n^{1 / 2}\right] \\
= & H_{1 n}+H_{2 n}-H_{3 n}-H_{4 n} .
\end{aligned}
$$

We investigate the behavior of each of the above terms and show that

$$
\begin{aligned}
H_{1 n} & \rightarrow\left[\int_{0}^{1} r X(r) d r\right] \mathrm{E}\left[\ell_{\beta 2}\left(F^{*}\left(Y_{j-1}\right), F^{*}\left(Y_{j}\right), \beta^{*}\right) f^{*}\left(Y_{j}\right)\right] \\
H_{2 n} & \rightarrow \int_{0}^{1} \int_{0}^{r} X(s) d s d r \mathrm{E}\left[\ell_{\beta 2}\left(F^{*}\left(Y_{t-1}\right), F^{*}\left(Y_{t}\right), \beta^{*}\right) f\left(Y_{t}\right)\right] \\
H_{3 n} & \rightarrow\left[\int_{0}^{1} r X(r) d r\right] \mathrm{E}\left\{\ell_{\beta 2}\left(F^{*}\left(Y_{t-1}\right), F^{*}\left(Y_{t}\right), \beta^{*}\right) f\left(Y_{t}\right)\right\}, \\
H_{4 n} & \rightarrow \int_{0}^{1} \int_{0}^{r} X(s) d s d r \mathrm{E}\left\{\ell_{\beta 2}\left(F^{*}\left(Y_{t-1}\right), F^{*}\left(Y_{t}\right), \beta^{*}\right) f\left(Y_{t}\right)\right\}
\end{aligned}
$$

Thus $A_{n 3}=o_{p}(1)$. Similarly, $A_{n 1}=o_{p}(1)$. The semiparametric copula estimator of $\beta$ based on filtered data is asymptotically equivalent to the infeasible semiparametric copula estimator of $\beta$ based on the unobserved data $Y_{t}$,

$$
\Sigma_{n} \sqrt{n}\left(\widehat{\beta}_{S P}-\beta^{*}\right)=\Sigma_{n} \sqrt{n}\left(\widetilde{\beta}_{S P}-\beta^{*}\right)+o_{p}(1)=S_{n}+A_{n 2}+A_{n 4}+o_{p}(1)
$$

By Chen and Fan (2006a), we can then obtain the result of Theorem 4.

## Appendix C: Additional Monte Carlo Tables

We investigate the finite sample performance of the semiparametric copula estimator $\widehat{\beta}_{S P}$, the parametric copula estimator $\widehat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ with corrected specified parametric marginals; the parametric copula
estimator $\widehat{\beta}_{P 1}$ with a normal distribution $N\left(0, \bar{\alpha}^{2}\right)$ as the misspecified marginal distribution; and the infeasible semiparametric estimator $\widetilde{\beta}_{S P}$ (using $\left\{Y_{t}\right\}$ directly). Recall that $\widehat{\beta}_{S P}$ and $\widetilde{\beta}_{S P}$ have the same asymptotic normal distribution, which does not depend on any filtration and the specification of $F^{*}$. The limiting distributions of $\widehat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ and $\widehat{\beta}_{P 1}$ depend on the filtration and the parametric estimation of $F^{*}$ in complicated ways; they are generally non-normal under the stochastic trend (unit root and cointegration) filtration. Tables 1 and 2 in Appendix A of the paper already reported the performance of the infeasible parametric estimator $\widetilde{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ (using $\left\{Y_{t}\right\}$ directly) with correctly specified parametric marginals.

Tables 3-6 below report the finite sample behaviors of the feasible estimators $\widehat{\beta}_{S P}, \widehat{\beta}_{P^{*}}, \widehat{\beta}_{P 1}$ and the infeasible estimator $\widetilde{\beta}_{S P}$ for models with stochastic trends. Tables $3 \mathrm{~A}-3 \mathrm{D}$ correspond to the unit root model when the true marginal distribution is student- $t(3)$. Tables 4A - 4D summarize results for the unit root model when the true marginal distribution is re-centered Chi-square with d.f. 3. Tables $5 \mathrm{~A}-5 \mathrm{D}$ correspond to the cointegrated model when the true marginal distribution is student- $t(3)$. Tables 6A-6D summarize results for the cointegrated model when the true marginal distribution is re-centered Chi-square with d.f. 3. Again, "A to D" correspond to Gaussian, Frank, Clayton and Gumbel copulas. In all the Tables, the number of Monte Carlo repetition is 2000 and sample size is $n=500$. The Monte Carlo bias, variance, and "Ramse" (the Ratio of MSE of an estimator over the MSE of $\widehat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ ) are reported in each table.

Table 3A: Unit Root Time Series, Gaussian Copula
(True marginal is student- $\mathrm{t}(3), n=500$ )

| $\beta^{*}$ | -0.5 | -0.3 | -0.1 | 0.1 | 0.3 | 0.5 |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $\hat{\beta}_{S P}$ Bias | 0.0032 | -0.0015 | -0.0022 | -0.0010 | -0.0005 | -0.0020 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{S P}$ Std | 0.0413 | 0.0444 | 0.0464 | 0.0464 | 0.0443 | 0.0398 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{S P}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{0 . 9 6 0 9}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 0 4 8 7}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 0 5 8 7}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 0 5 5 2}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 0 6 5 1}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 0 9 7 7}$ |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Bias | 0.0149 | 0.0072 | 0.0024 | -0.0010 | -0.0036 | -0.0054 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Std | 0.0396 | 0.0428 | 0.0451 | 0.0452 | 0.0428 | 0.0376 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P 1}$ Bias | 0.0068 | -0.0072 | -0.0130 | 0.0132 | 0.0094 | -0.0024 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P 1}$ Std | 0.0738 | 0.0844 | 0.0918 | 0.0945 | 0.0869 | 0.0720 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P 1}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{3 . 0 7 0 1}$ | $\mathbf{3 . 8 1 9 5}$ | $\mathbf{4 . 2 2 1 0}$ | $\mathbf{4 . 4 5 8 2}$ | $\mathbf{4 . 1 4 8 2}$ | $\mathbf{3 . 5 9 6 7}$ |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{S P}$ Bias | -0.0065 | -0.0071 | -0.0053 | -0.0027 | -0.0013 | -0.0024 |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{S P}$ Std | 0.0388 | 0.0436 | 0.0461 | 0.0463 | 0.0442 | 0.0397 |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{S P}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{0 . 8 6 7 4}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 0 3 6 8}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 0 5 8 9}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 0 5 4 9}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 0 6 1 5}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 0 9 4 3}$ |

Table 3B: Unit Root Time Series, Frank Copula
(True marginal is student- $\mathrm{t}(3), n=500$ )

| $\beta^{*}$ | -5 | -3 | -1 | 1 | 3 | 5 |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $\hat{\beta}_{S P}$ Bias | 0.1320 | 0.0370 | 0.0026 | -0.0118 | -0.0312 | -0.0746 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{S P}$ Std | 0.4599 | 0.3355 | 0.2831 | 0.2819 | 0.3205 | 0.3926 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{S P}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{0 . 9 4 5 2}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 0 4 3 5}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 0 2 0 0}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 0 2 9 3}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 1 3 6 7}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 3 0 5 3}$ |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Bias | 0.2276 | 0.0858 | 0.0239 | -0.0032 | -0.0219 | -0.0444 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Std | 0.4363 | 0.3190 | 0.2793 | 0.2781 | 0.3012 | 0.3469 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P 1}$ Bias | -1.3618 | -1.2542 | -0.7833 | 0.8126 | 1.3305 | 1.5537 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P 1}$ Std | 1.3053 | 1.2081 | 1.1563 | 1.1914 | 1.2061 | 1.2220 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P 1}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{1 4 . 6 9 4 1}$ | $\mathbf{2 7 . 7 8 3 4}$ | $\mathbf{2 4 . 8 1 7 2}$ | $\mathbf{2 6 . 8 8 9 2}$ | $\mathbf{3 5 . 3 6 1 4}$ | $\mathbf{3 1 . 9 3 7 9}$ |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{S P}$ Bias | -0.0330 | -0.0307 | -0.0232 | -0.0218 | -0.0362 | -0.0764 |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{S P}$ Std | 0.3973 | 0.3209 | 0.2799 | 0.2809 | 0.3192 | 0.3915 |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{S P}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{0 . 6 5 6 3}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 5 1 8}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 0 0 3 9}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 0 2 6 4}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 1 3 1 7}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 3 0 0 5}$ |

Table 3C: Unit Root Time Series, Clayton Copula
(True marginal is student-t $\mathrm{t}(3), n=500$ )

| $\beta^{*}$ | 0.5 | 1 | 2 | 4 | 6 | 8 |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $\hat{\beta}_{S P}$ Bias | 0.0029 | -0.0238 | -0.1400 | -0.6490 | -1.5641 | -2.7850 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{S P}$ Std | 0.1032 | 0.1930 | 0.4410 | 1.0001 | 1.3963 | 1.6425 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{S P}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{1 . 4 1 2 9}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 7 6 0 8}$ | $\mathbf{2 . 0 3 0 9}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 7 6 1 8}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 7 4 8 5}$ | $\mathbf{2 . 1 5 0 1}$ |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Bias | -0.0044 | -0.0137 | -0.0504 | -0.2014 | -0.4862 | -0.9244 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Std | 0.0868 | 0.1459 | 0.3207 | 0.8753 | 1.5092 | 2.0019 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P 1}$ Bias | -0.0623 | 0.0084 | 0.1702 | 0.2957 | 0.1473 | -0.1913 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P 1}$ Std | 0.4181 | 0.5283 | 0.6247 | 0.9293 | 1.2528 | 1.6933 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P 1}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{2 3 . 6 7 1 9}$ | $\mathbf{1 2 . 9 9 8 7}$ | $\mathbf{3 . 9 7 7 0}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 1 7 8 8}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 6 3 2 9}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 5 9 7 2}$ |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{S P}$ Bias | 0.0016 | -0.0256 | -0.1415 | -0.6389 | -1.5373 | -2.7485 |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{S P}$ Std | 0.1028 | 0.1905 | 0.4373 | 1.0141 | 1.4205 | 1.6720 |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{S P}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{1 . 4 0 1 3}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 7 2 0 6}$ | $\mathbf{2 . 0 0 3 6}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 7 8 0 6}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 7 4 2 5}$ | $\mathbf{2 . 1 2 8 7}$ |

Table 3D: Unit Root Time Series, Gumbel Copula
(True marginal is student- $\mathrm{t}(3), n=500$ )

| $\beta^{*}$ | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 | 7 |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $\hat{\beta}_{S P}$ Bias | -0.0294 | -0.1470 | -0.3747 | -0.7229 | -1.1864 | -1.7400 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{S P}$ Std | 0.1641 | 0.3615 | 0.5748 | 0.7517 | 0.8779 | 0.9840 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{S P}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{1 . 3 9 3 0}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 4 2 9 0}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 4 4 0 8}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 3 6 5 4}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 4 6 8 9}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 6 7 8 3}$ |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Bias | -0.0148 | -0.0569 | -0.1378 | -0.2572 | -0.4252 | -0.6287 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Std | 0.1404 | 0.3215 | 0.5548 | 0.8546 | 1.1411 | 1.4091 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P 1}$ Bias | 0.1259 | 0.1172 | 0.0386 | -0.1034 | -0.3119 | -0.5863 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P 1}$ Std | 0.3842 | 0.5646 | 0.8089 | 1.0408 | 1.2631 | 1.4861 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P 1}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{8 . 1 9 6 5}$ | $\mathbf{3 . 1 1 9 6}$ | $\mathbf{2 . 0 0 6 9}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 3 7 3 3}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 1 4 1 4}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 0 7 1 9}$ |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{S P}$ Bias | -0.0321 | -0.1540 | -0.3861 | -0.7354 | -1.1963 | -1.7464 |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{S P}$ Std | 0.1596 | 0.3512 | 0.5534 | 0.7335 | 0.8846 | 1.0121 |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{S P}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{1 . 3 2 8 4}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 3 7 9 5}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 3 9 3 3}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 3 5 4 5}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 4 9 2 7}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 7 1 1 2}$ |

Table 4A: Unit Root Time Series, Gaussian Copula
(True marginal is re-centered Chi-square with d.f. $3, n=500$ )

| $\beta^{*}$ | -0.5 | -0.3 | -0.1 | 0.1 | 0.3 | 0.5 |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $\hat{\beta}_{S P}$ Bias | 0.0049 | 0.0010 | -0.0003 | 0.0001 | 0.0001 | -0.0017 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{S P}$ Std | 0.0421 | 0.0447 | 0.0462 | 0.0463 | 0.0442 | 0.0398 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{S P}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{1 . 6 1 2 3}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 1 4 3 4}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 9 1 2}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 8 4 5}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 0 6 6 8}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 2 0 2 8}$ |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Bias | 0.0026 | 0.0004 | 0.0017 | 0.0027 | 0.0029 | 0.0029 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Std | 0.0333 | 0.0418 | 0.0463 | 0.0466 | 0.0427 | 0.0362 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P 1}$ Bias | 0.0989 | 0.0511 | 0.0137 | -0.0133 | -0.0301 | -0.0372 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P 1}$ Std | 0.0309 | 0.0371 | 0.0429 | 0.0472 | 0.0493 | 0.0475 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P 1}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{9 . 6 2 5 6}$ | $\mathbf{2 . 2 8 1 6}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 4 1 4}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 1 0 4 6}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 8 1 8 6}$ | $\mathbf{2 . 7 5 1 9}$ |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{S P}$ Bias | -0.0065 | -0.0071 | -0.0053 | -0.0027 | -0.0013 | -0.0024 |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{S P}$ Std | 0.0388 | 0.0436 | 0.0461 | 0.0463 | 0.0442 | 0.0397 |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{S P}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{1 . 3 9 2 2}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 1 1 6 2}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 0 0 3 2}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 8 7 0}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 0 6 6 6}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 1 9 6 1}$ |

Table 4B: Unit Root Time Series, Frank Copula
(True marginal is re-centered Chi-square with d.f. $3, n=500$ )

| $\beta^{*}$ | -5 | -3 | -1 | 1 | 3 | 5 |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $\hat{\beta}_{S P}$ Bias | 0.1025 | 0.0325 | 0.0014 | -0.0109 | -0.0275 | -0.0624 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{S P}$ Std | 0.4346 | 0.3291 | 0.2801 | 0.2815 | 0.3201 | 0.3923 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{S P}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{1 . 5 6 8 9}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 1 9 0 6}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 8 0 8}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 8 6 0}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 0 7 0 4}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 0 6 2 7}$ |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Bias | 0.0513 | -0.0012 | 0.0002 | 0.0144 | 0.0327 | 0.0735 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Std | 0.3528 | 0.3031 | 0.2828 | 0.2833 | 0.3088 | 0.3783 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P 1}$ Bias | 0.5930 | 0.1565 | 0.0413 | 0.2045 | 0.4112 | 0.5774 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P 1}$ Std | 0.5355 | 0.4057 | 0.3297 | 0.3397 | 0.4119 | 0.5258 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P 1}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{5 . 0 2 3 5}$ | $\mathbf{2 . 0 5 8 2}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 3 8 0 3}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 9 5 4 0}$ | $\mathbf{3 . 5 1 2 8}$ | $\mathbf{4 . 1 0 7 0}$ |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{S P}$ Bias | -0.0330 | -0.0307 | -0.0232 | -0.0218 | -0.0362 | -0.0764 |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{S P}$ Std | 0.3973 | 0.3209 | 0.2799 | 0.2809 | 0.3192 | 0.3915 |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{S P}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{1 . 2 5 0 5}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 1 3 0 7}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 8 6 7}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 8 6 6}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 0 7 0 3}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 0 7 1 4}$ |

Table 4C: Unit Root Time Series, Clayton Copula (True marginal is re-centered Chi-square with d.f. $3, n=500$ )

| $\beta^{*}$ | 0.5 | 1 | 2 | 4 | 6 | 8 |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $\hat{\beta}_{S P}$ Bias | 0.0030 | -0.0260 | -0.1464 | -0.6391 | -1.4513 | -2.5290 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{S P}$ Std | 0.1030 | 0.1901 | 0.4360 | 1.0528 | 1.7108 | 2.3180 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{S P}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{1 . 1 1 4 2}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 3 1 1 2}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 4 3 5 1}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 3 3 6 8}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 2 2 6 7}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 1 7 8 1}$ |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Bias | -0.0068 | -0.0431 | -0.1549 | -0.5338 | -1.1085 | -1.8549 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Std | 0.0973 | 0.1619 | 0.3513 | 0.9218 | 1.6954 | 2.5592 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P 1}$ Bias | 0.6387 | 0.7224 | 0.7678 | 0.7159 | 0.6593 | 0.5805 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P 1}$ Std | 0.1603 | 0.2091 | 0.3837 | 1.0003 | 2.1043 | 3.3443 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P 1}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{4 5 . 5 3 7 0}$ | $\mathbf{2 0 . 1 4 6 6}$ | $\mathbf{4 . 9 9 8 4}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 3 3 3 6}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 1 8 5 2}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 1 5 3 2}$ |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{S P}$ Bias | 0.0016 | -0.0256 | -0.1415 | -0.6389 | -1.5373 | -2.7485 |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{S P}$ Std | 0.1028 | 0.1905 | 0.4373 | 1.0141 | 1.4205 | 1.6720 |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{S P}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{1 . 1 1 0 8}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 3 1 6 3}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 4 3 2 9}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 2 6 6 1}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 0 6 7 7}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 0 3 6 0}$ |

Table 4D: Unit Root Time Series, Gumbel Copula
(True marginal is re-centered Chi-square with d.f. $3, n=500$ )

| $\beta^{*}$ | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 | 7 |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $\hat{\beta}_{S P}$ Bias | -0.0243 | -0.1264 | -0.3328 | -0.6624 | -1.1074 | -1.6450 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{S P}$ Std | 0.1645 | 0.3706 | 0.5923 | 0.7663 | 0.8860 | 0.9805 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{S P}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{1 . 5 4 3 6}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 7 1 5 8}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 8 2 7 1}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 8 1 6 9}$ | $\mathbf{2 . 0 0 7 4}$ | $\mathbf{2 . 3 6 5 3}$ |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Bias | 0.0432 | 0.1260 | 0.2160 | 0.3035 | 0.3676 | 0.3911 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Std | 0.1266 | 0.2711 | 0.4538 | 0.6875 | 0.9310 | 1.1822 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P 1}$ Bias | -0.1573 | -0.1898 | -0.2874 | -0.4533 | -0.6804 | -0.9590 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P 1}$ Std | 0.2221 | 0.5060 | 0.8124 | 1.1127 | 1.3962 | 1.6602 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P 1}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{4 . 1 3 6 1}$ | $\mathbf{3 . 2 6 8 2}$ | $\mathbf{2 . 9 3 9 5}$ | $\mathbf{2 . 5 5 6 2}$ | $\mathbf{2 . 4 0 7 6}$ | $\mathbf{2 . 3 7 0 9}$ |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{S P}$ Bias | -0.0321 | -0.1540 | -0.3861 | -0.7354 | -1.1963 | -1.7464 |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{S P}$ Std | 0.1596 | 0.3512 | 0.5534 | 0.7335 | 0.8846 | 1.0121 |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{S P}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{1 . 4 7 9 8}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 6 4 5 3}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 8 0 2 4}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 9 1 0 5}$ | $\mathbf{2 . 2 0 9 2}$ | $\mathbf{2 . 6 2 7 6}$ |

Table 5A: Cointegrated Time Series, Gaussian Copula (True marginal is student $\mathrm{t}(3), n=500$ )

| $\beta^{*}$ | -0.5 | -0.3 | -0.1 | 0.1 | 0.3 | 0.5 |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $\hat{\beta}_{S P}$ Bias | -0.0066 | -0.0074 | -0.0058 | -0.0034 | -0.0023 | -0.0037 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{S P}$ Std | 0.0388 | 0.0435 | 0.0462 | 0.0465 | 0.0444 | 0.0398 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{S P}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{1 . 1 3 8 6}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 0 9 2 5}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 0 6 1 1}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 0 4 6 0}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 0 5 1 9}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 0 8 5 0}$ |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Bias | 0.0003 | -0.0011 | -0.0025 | -0.0039 | -0.0053 | -0.0066 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Std | 0.0369 | 0.0422 | 0.0451 | 0.0454 | 0.0430 | 0.0378 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P 1}$ Bias | -0.0039 | -0.0140 | -0.0176 | 0.0102 | 0.0075 | -0.0038 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P 1}$ Std | 0.0725 | 0.0838 | 0.0915 | 0.0945 | 0.0870 | 0.0722 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P_{1}}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{3 . 8 7 1 4}$ | $\mathbf{4 . 0 4 5 2}$ | $\mathbf{4 . 2 5 5 4}$ | $\mathbf{4 . 3 4 4 8}$ | $\mathbf{4 . 0 6 3 2}$ | $\mathbf{3 . 5 5 1 8}$ |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{S P}$ Bias | -0.0065 | -0.0071 | -0.0053 | -0.0027 | -0.0013 | -0.0024 |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{S P}$ Std | 0.0388 | 0.0436 | 0.0461 | 0.0463 | 0.0442 | 0.0397 |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{S P}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{1 . 1 4 0 1}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 0 9 1 6}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 0 5 6 7}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 0 3 5 0}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 0 4 1 1}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 0 7 3 0}$ |

Table 5B: Cointegrated Time Series, Frank Copula
(True marginal is student $\mathrm{t}(3), n=500$ )

| $\beta^{*}$ | -5 | -3 | -1 | 1 | 3 | 5 |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $\hat{\beta}_{S P}$ Bias | -0.0213 | -0.262 | -0.0233 | -0.0257 | -0.0470 | -0.1018 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{S P}$ Std | 0.3981 | 0.3216 | 0.2811 | 0.2819 | 0.3196 | 0.3913 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{S P}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{1 . 2 9 8 0}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 1 3 2 6}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 0 1 8 2}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 0 2 2 1}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 1 3 5 5}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 3 1 2 0}$ |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Bias | 0.0137 | -0.0018 | -0.0106 | -0.0189 | -0.0347 | -0.0628 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Std | 0.3496 | 0.3032 | 0.2793 | 0.2793 | 0.3012 | 0.3473 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P 1}$ Bias | -1.5928 | -1.3566 | -0.8338 | 0.7883 | 1.3134 | 1.5319 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P 1}$ Std | 1.2267 | 1.1657 | 1.1345 | 1.1913 | 1.2069 | 1.2233 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P 1}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{3 3 . 0 1 1 6}$ | $\mathbf{3 4 . 7 9 8 2}$ | $\mathbf{2 5 . 3 7 0 3}$ | $\mathbf{2 6 . 0 4 0 1}$ | $\mathbf{3 4 . 6 1 7 8}$ | $\mathbf{3 0 . 8 4 8 3}$ |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{S P}$ Bias | -0.0330 | -0.0307 | -0.0232 | -0.0218 | -0.0362 | -0.0764 |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{S P}$ Std | 0.3973 | 0.3209 | 0.2799 | 0.2809 | 0.3192 | 0.3915 |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{S P}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{1 . 2 9 8 0}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 1 3 0 1}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 0 0 9 9}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 0 1 3 0}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 1 2 2 9}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 2 7 7 0}$ |

Table 5C: Cointegrated Time Series, Clayton Copula
(True marginal is student $\mathrm{t}(3), n=500$ )

| $\beta^{*}$ | 0.5 | 1 | 2 | 4 | 6 | 8 |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $\hat{\beta}_{S P}$ Bias | 0.0004 | -0.0280 | -0.1519 | -0.7054 | -1.6939 | -2.9915 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{S P}$ Std | 0.1032 | 0.1927 | 0.4434 | 0.9793 | 1.3301 | 1.5500 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{S P}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{1 . 3 6 5 5}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 6 8 2 8}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 9 2 1 1}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 7 6 1 3}$ | $\mathbf{2 . 1 0 6 1}$ | $\mathbf{2 . 6 8 3 6}$ |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Bias | -0.0063 | -0.0149 | -0.0498 | -0.2098 | -0.5225 | -0.9808 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Std | 0.0881 | 0.1494 | 0.3344 | 0.8849 | 1.3890 | 1.8078 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P 1}$ Bias | -0.0647 | 0.0067 | 0.1725 | 0.3067 | 0.1600 | -0.1894 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P 1}$ Std | 0.4123 | 0.5222 | 0.6256 | 0.9401 | 1.2729 | 1.7079 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P 1}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{2 2 . 3 3 3 7}$ | $\mathbf{1 2 . 1 0 2 9}$ | $\mathbf{3 . 6 8 3 1}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 1 8 2 4}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 7 4 7 3}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 6 9 8 0}$ |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{S P}$ Bias | 0.0016 | -0.0256 | -0.1415 | -0.6389 | -1.5373 | -2.7485 |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{S P}$ Std | 0.1028 | 0.1905 | 0.4373 | 1.0141 | 1.4205 | 1.6720 |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{S P}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{1 . 3 5 6 1}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 6 4 0 0}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 8 4 7 5}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 7 3 7 1}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 9 8 9 2}$ | $\mathbf{2 . 4 4 6 8}$ |

Table 5D: Cointegrated Time Series, Gumbel Copula
(True marginal is student $\mathrm{t}(3), n=500$ )

| $\beta^{*}$ | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 | 7 |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $\hat{\beta}_{S P}$ Bias | -0.0349 | -0.1676 | -0.4205 | -0.8015 | -1.3003 | -1.8937 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{S P}$ Std | 0.1627 | 0.3558 | 0.5579 | 0.7233 | 0.8493 | 0.9527 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{S P}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{1 . 1 6 3 6}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 2 7 1 8}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 3 9 1 6}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 6 0 7 6}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 9 3 0 1}$ | $\mathbf{2 . 2 5 4 4}$ |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Bias | -0.0140 | -0.0559 | -0.1443 | -0.2866 | -0.4859 | -0.7285 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Std | 0.1537 | 0.3442 | 0.5743 | 0.8018 | 1.0068 | 1.2094 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P 1}$ Bias | 0.1251 | 0.1147 | 0.0301 | -0.1249 | -0.3561 | -0.6626 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P 1}$ Std | 0.3855 | 0.5664 | 0.8119 | 1.0448 | 1.2625 | 1.4788 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P_{1}}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{6 . 8 9 8 9}$ | $\mathbf{2 . 7 4 5 6}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 8 8 2 2}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 5 2 7 4}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 3 7 6 9}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 3 1 7 2}$ |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{S P}$ Bias | -0.0321 | -0.1540 | -0.3861 | -0.7354 | -1.1963 | -1.7464 |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{S P}$ Std | 0.1596 | 0.3512 | 0.5534 | 0.7335 | 0.8846 | 1.0121 |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{S P}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{1 . 1 1 2 9}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 2 0 8 8}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 2 9 8 4}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 4 8 8 2}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 7 7 1 3}$ | $\mathbf{2 . 0 4 3 8}$ |

Table 6A: Cointegrated Time Series, Gaussian Copula (True marginal is re-centered Chi-square with d.f. $3, n=500$ )

| $\beta^{*}$ | -0.5 | -0.3 | -0.1 | 0.1 | 0.3 | 0.5 |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $\hat{\beta}_{S P}$ Bias | -0.0063 | -0.0072 | -0.0056 | -0.0032 | -0.0021 | -0.0035 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{S P}$ Std | 0.0388 | 0.0436 | 0.0463 | 0.0465 | 0.0444 | 0.0399 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{S P}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{1 . 3 8 9 8}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 1 1 4 2}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 0 1 0 3}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 9 2 6}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 9 5 2}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 0 5 2 7}$ |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Bias | -0.0013 | -0.0034 | -0.0040 | -0.0015 | 0.0033 | 0.0073 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Std | 0.0333 | 0.0417 | 0.0462 | 0.0468 | 0.0444 | 0.0384 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P 1}$ Bias | 0.0911 | 0.0453 | 0.0097 | -0.0159 | -0.0318 | -0.0384 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P 1}$ Std | 0.0302 | 0.0371 | 0.0431 | 0.0474 | 0.0493 | 0.0475 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P 1}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{8 . 2 8 6 5}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 9 5 1 9}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 0 6 2}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 1 4 1 5}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 7 3 7 3}$ | $\mathbf{2 . 4 4 1 7}$ |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{S P}$ Bias | -0.0065 | -0.0071 | -0.0053 | -0.0027 | -0.0013 | -0.0024 |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{S P}$ Std | 0.0388 | 0.0436 | 0.0461 | 0.0463 | 0.0442 | 0.0397 |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{S P}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{1 . 3 9 7 1}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 1 1 1 8}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 0 0 4 0}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 8 3 5}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 8 5 7}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 0 3 3 9}$ |

Table 6B: Cointegrated Time Series, Frank Copula
(True marginal is re-centered Chi-square with d.f. $3, n=500$ )

| $\beta^{*}$ | -5 | -3 | -1 | 1 | 3 | 5 |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $\hat{\beta}_{S P}$ Bias | -0.0313 | -0.0325 | -0.0263 | -0.0252 | -0.0387 | -0.0773 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{S P}$ Std | 0.3968 | 0.3213 | 0.2806 | 0.2816 | 0.3201 | 0.3937 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{S P}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{1 . 3 4 2 0}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 1 1 9 7}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 8 1 9}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 8 4 9}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 4 6 6}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 8 1 6 9}$ |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Bias | -0.0243 | -0.0303 | -0.0270 | -0.0015 | 0.0548 | 0.1379 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Std | 0.3427 | 0.3037 | 0.2831 | 0.2849 | 0.3268 | 0.4219 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P 1}$ Bias | 0.5008 | 0.1040 | 0.0149 | 0.1884 | 0.3985 | 0.5604 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P 1}$ Std | 0.3628 | 0.3278 | 0.3109 | 0.3385 | 0.4141 | 0.5344 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P 1}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{3 . 2 4 0 2}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 2 6 9 7}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 1 9 7 7}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 8 4 9 6}$ | $\mathbf{3 . 0 0 8 2}$ | $\mathbf{3 . 0 4 2 9}$ |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{S P}$ Bias | -0.0330 | -0.0307 | -0.0232 | -0.0218 | -0.0362 | -0.0764 |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{S P}$ Std | 0.3973 | 0.3209 | 0.2799 | 0.2809 | 0.3192 | 0.3915 |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{S P}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{1 . 3 4 6 3}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 1 1 5 3}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 7 5 7}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 7 8 2}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 9 4 0 0}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 8 0 7 5}$ |

Table 6C: Cointegrated Time Series, Clayton Copula (True marginal is re-centered Chi-square with d.f. $3, n=500$ )

| $\beta^{*}$ | 0.5 | 1 | 2 | 4 | 6 | 8 |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $\hat{\beta}_{S P}$ Bias | -0.0034 | -0.0399 | -0.1888 | -0.7936 | -1.7964 | -3.0777 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{S P}$ Std | 0.1025 | 0.1872 | 0.4119 | 0.9159 | 1.3067 | 1.5658 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{S P}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{0 . 9 9 8 5}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 1 5 0 6}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 3 6 2 6}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 4 0 7 2}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 4 2 3 8}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 4 9 1 8}$ |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Bias | -0.0091 | -0.0403 | -0.1571 | -0.5909 | -1.2861 | -2.1973 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Std | 0.1022 | 0.1739 | 0.3550 | 0.8333 | 1.3460 | 1.7789 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P 1}$ Bias | 0.6315 | 0.7141 | 0.7526 | 0.6658 | 0.4923 | 0.1799 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P 1}$ Std | 0.1626 | 0.2150 | 0.3894 | 0.9684 | 1.8165 | 2.6612 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P 1}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{4 0 . 3 7 8 7}$ | $\mathbf{1 7 . 4 6 0 8}$ | $\mathbf{4 . 7 6 5 6}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 3 2 3 3}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 0 2 2 0}$ | $\mathbf{0 . 8 9 0 1}$ |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{S P}$ Bias | 0.0016 | -0.0256 | -0.1415 | -0.6389 | -1.5373 | -2.7485 |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{S P}$ Std | 0.1028 | 0.1905 | 0.4373 | 1.0141 | 1.4205 | 1.6720 |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{S P}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{1 . 0 0 4 2}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 1 6 0 3}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 4 0 1 9}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 3 7 6 4}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 2 6 4 1}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 2 9 4 9}$ |

Table 6D: Cointegrated Time Series, Gumbel Copula (True marginal is re-centered Chi-square with d.f. $3, n=500$ )

| $\beta^{*}$ | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 | 7 |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $\hat{\beta}_{S P}$ Bias | -0.0264 | -0.1393 | -0.3687 | -0.7297 | -1.2112 | -1.7912 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{S P}$ Std | 0.1646 | 0.3676 | 0.5754 | 0.7426 | 0.8632 | 0.9660 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{S P}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{1 . 4 5 1 8}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 5 3 8 9}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 7 6 9 5}$ | $\mathbf{2 . 0 9 0 5}$ | $\mathbf{2 . 5 9 2 8}$ | $\mathbf{3 . 3 7 6 5}$ |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Bias | 0.0663 | 0.1697 | 0.2678 | 0.3417 | 0.3741 | 0.3457 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Std | 0.1214 | 0.2676 | 0.4385 | 0.6338 | 0.8445 | 1.0522 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P^{*}}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P 1}$ Bias | -0.1548 | -0.1821 | -0.2766 | -0.4411 | -0.6698 | -0.9527 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P 1}$ Std | 0.2238 | 0.5124 | 0.8083 | 1.0926 | 1.3600 | 1.6112 |
| $\hat{\beta}_{P 1}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{3 . 8 6 9 0}$ | $\mathbf{2 . 9 4 5 5}$ | $\mathbf{2 . 7 6 4 6}$ | $\mathbf{2 . 6 7 7 9}$ | $\mathbf{2 . 6 9 3 7}$ | $\mathbf{2 . 8 5 6 3}$ |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{S P}$ Bias | -0.0321 | -0.1540 | -0.3861 | -0.7354 | -1.1963 | -1.7464 |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{S P}$ Std | 0.1596 | 0.3512 | 0.5534 | 0.7335 | 0.8846 | 1.0121 |
| $\tilde{\beta}_{S P}$ Ramse | $\mathbf{1 . 3 8 4 3}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 4 6 4 6}$ | $\mathbf{1 . 7 2 4 9}$ | $\mathbf{2 . 0 8 1 0}$ | $\mathbf{2 . 5 9 4 5}$ | $\mathbf{3 . 3 2 1 3}$ |

## Appendix D: Additional Proofs

## D.1. Proofs of Results for Parametric Models

We first introduce a useful inequality of absolutely regular process given by Yoshihara (1976).
Lemma A. Let $x_{t_{1}}, x_{t_{2}}, \ldots, x_{t_{k}}$ (with $t_{1}<t_{2}<\cdots<t_{k}$ ) be absolutely regular random vectors with mixing coefficients $\beta(t)$. Let $h\left(x_{t_{1}}, x_{t_{2}}, \ldots, x_{t_{k}}\right)$ be a Borel measurable function and there be a $\delta>0$ such that $P=\max \left\{M_{1}, M_{2}\right\}<\infty$, where

$$
\begin{aligned}
& M_{1}=\sup _{t_{1}, t_{2}, \ldots, t_{k}} \int\left|h\left(x_{t_{1}}, x_{t_{2}}, \ldots, x_{t_{k}}\right)\right|^{1+\delta} d F\left(x_{t_{1}}, x_{t_{2}}, \ldots, x_{t_{k}}\right), \\
& M_{2}=\sup _{t_{1}, t_{2}, \ldots, t_{k}} \int\left|h\left(x_{t_{1}}, x_{t_{2}}, \ldots, x_{t_{k}}\right)\right|^{1+\delta} d F\left(x_{t_{1}}, \ldots, x_{t_{j}}\right) d F\left(x_{t_{j+1}}, \ldots, x_{t_{k}}\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

Then for all $j$, we have:

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left|\int h\left(x_{t_{1}}, \ldots, x_{t_{k}}\right) d F\left(x_{t_{1}}, \ldots, x_{t_{k}}\right)-h\left(x_{t_{1}}, \ldots, x_{t_{k}}\right) d F\left(x_{t_{1}}, \ldots, x_{t_{j}}\right) d F\left(x_{t_{j+1}}, \ldots, x_{t_{k}}\right)\right| \\
& \leq 4 P^{\frac{1}{1+\delta}} \beta\left(t_{j+1}-t_{j}\right)^{\frac{\delta}{1+\delta}} .
\end{aligned}
$$

## D.1.1. Proof of Theorem 1 for consistency of $\widehat{\beta}_{P}$

For the first step estimator, $\widehat{\alpha}=\arg \max _{\alpha \in \mathcal{A}} \sum_{t=1}^{n} \log f\left(\widehat{Y}_{t}, \alpha\right)$, let $q(\alpha)=\mathrm{E}\left[\log f\left(Y_{t}, \alpha\right)\right]$, we need to verify that

$$
\sup _{\alpha \in \mathcal{A}}\left|\frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=1}^{n} \log f\left(\widehat{Y}_{t}, \alpha\right)-q(\alpha)\right|=o_{p}(1) .
$$

By (1) Assumption ID1(1): compactness of $\mathcal{A} ;(2)$ Assumption MX: weak dependence of $Y_{t} ;$ (3) Assumption ID1(3): $f(y, \alpha)$ is continuous in $\alpha \in \mathcal{A}$; and (4) Assumption M1(1): $\mathrm{E}\left[\sup _{\alpha \in \mathcal{A}}\left|\log f\left(Y_{t}, \alpha\right)\right|\right]<$ $\infty$, we can show that $\sup _{\alpha \in \mathcal{A}}\left|\frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=1}^{n} \log f\left(Y_{t}, \alpha\right)-q(\alpha)\right|=o_{p}(1)$. Thus, we only need to show that

$$
\sup _{\alpha \in \mathcal{A}}\left|\frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=1}^{n}\left[\log f\left(\widehat{Y}_{t}, \alpha\right)-\log f\left(Y_{t}, \alpha\right)\right]\right|=o_{p}(1) .
$$

Denote the re-standardized $X_{t}$ by $\underline{X}_{t} \equiv n^{1 / 2} D_{n}^{-1} X_{t}$. Let $q_{t}(\eta, \alpha)=\log f\left(Y_{t}-\underline{X}_{t}^{\prime} \eta, \alpha\right)$. Under Assumption M1(2), we have, for all sequences of positive numbers $\left\{\epsilon_{n}\right\}$ with $\epsilon_{n}=o(1)$,

$$
\sup _{\alpha \in \mathcal{A},\|\eta\| \leq \epsilon_{n}}\left|\frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=1}^{n}\left[q_{t}(\eta, \alpha)-q_{t}(0, \alpha)\right]\right|=o_{p}(1) .
$$

Thus

$$
\sup _{\alpha \in \mathcal{A}}\left|\frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=1}^{n}\left[\log f\left(\widehat{Y}_{t}, \alpha\right)-\log f\left(Y_{t}, \alpha\right)\right]\right| \leq \sup _{\alpha \in \mathcal{A},\|\eta\| \leq \epsilon_{n}}\left|\frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=1}^{n}\left[q_{t}(\eta, \alpha)-q_{t}(0, \alpha)\right]\right|=o_{p}(1) .
$$

Together with Assumption ID1(2), we obtain consistency of $\widehat{\alpha}$.
For the second step estimation, we need to verify that $\sup _{\beta \in \mathcal{B}}\left\|\widehat{Q}_{n}(\beta)-Q(\beta)\right\|=o_{p}(1)$, where

$$
\widehat{Q}_{n}(\beta)=\frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=2}^{n} g\left(\widehat{Y}_{t-1}, \widehat{Y}_{t}, \widehat{\alpha}, \beta\right), \quad Q(\beta)=\mathrm{E}\left[g\left(Y_{t-1}, Y_{t}, \alpha^{*}, \beta\right)\right] .
$$

Denote $Q_{n}(\beta)=\frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=2}^{n} g\left(Y_{t-1}, Y_{t}, \alpha^{*}, \beta\right)$. Again by: (1) Assumption ID1(1): compactness of $\mathcal{B}$; (2) Assumption MX: weak dependence of $Y_{t}$; (3) Assumption $\operatorname{ID}(3): g(\cdot)$ is continuous in $\beta$; (4) Assumption M1(1): $\mathrm{E}\left[\sup _{\beta \in \mathfrak{B}, \alpha \in \mathcal{A}_{\delta}}\left|g\left(Y_{t-1}, Y_{t}, \alpha, \beta\right)\right|\right]<\infty$, we have $\sup _{\beta \in \mathcal{B}}\left|Q_{n}(\beta)-Q(\beta)\right|=o_{p}(1)$. Thus, it suffice to show that

$$
\sup _{\beta \in \mathcal{B}}\left|\widehat{Q}_{n}(\beta)-Q_{n}(\beta)\right|=o_{p}(1)
$$

Notice that $\widehat{Y}_{t}=Y_{t}-X_{t}^{\prime}\left(\widehat{\pi}-\pi^{*}\right)=Y_{t}-n^{-1 / 2}\left(X_{t}^{\prime} n^{1 / 2} D_{n}^{-1}\right) D_{n}\left(\widehat{\pi}-\pi^{*}\right)$, let

$$
D_{n}\left(\widehat{\pi}-\pi^{*}\right)=\delta_{n}, \sqrt{n}\left(\widehat{\alpha}-\alpha^{*}\right)=\Delta_{1 n},
$$

then we may write

$$
\widehat{Q}_{n}(\beta)=\frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=2}^{n} g\left(Y_{t-1}-n^{-1 / 2}\left(X_{t-1}^{\prime} n^{1 / 2} D_{n}^{-1}\right) \delta_{n}, Y_{t}-n^{-1 / 2}\left(X_{t}^{\prime} n^{1 / 2} D_{n}^{-1}\right) \delta_{n}, \alpha^{*}+n^{-1 / 2} \Delta_{1 n}, \beta\right) .
$$

Recall $\underline{X}_{t}=n^{1 / 2} D_{n}^{-1} X_{t}$, we let $m_{t}(\eta, \alpha, \beta)=g\left(Y_{t-1}-\underline{X}_{t-1}^{\prime} \eta, Y_{t}-\underline{X}_{t}^{\prime} \eta, \alpha, \beta\right)$. Under Assumption M1(2) that $g\left(s_{1}, s_{2}, \alpha, \beta\right)$ is uniformly continuous in ( $\left.s_{1}, s_{2}, \alpha\right)$, uniformly over $\beta \in \mathcal{B}$, thus we can show that, for all sequences $\left\{\epsilon_{n}\right\}$ with $\epsilon_{n}=o(1)$,

$$
\sup _{\beta \in \mathcal{B},\left\|\alpha-\alpha^{*}\right\|+\|\eta\| \leq \epsilon_{n}}\left|\frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=2}^{n}\left[m_{t}(\eta, \alpha, \beta)-m_{t}\left(0, \alpha^{*}, \beta\right)\right]\right|=o_{p}(1) .
$$

Let $\widehat{\eta}=n^{-1 / 2} \delta_{n}$, then

$$
\widehat{Q}_{n}(\beta)-Q_{n}(\beta)=\frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=2}^{n}\left[m_{t}(\widehat{\eta}, \widehat{\alpha}, \beta)-m_{t}\left(0, \alpha^{*}, \beta\right)\right]
$$

Notice that

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \sup _{\beta \in \mathcal{B}}\left|\widehat{Q}_{n}(\beta)-Q_{n}(\beta)\right| \\
\leq & \sup _{\beta \in \mathcal{B},\left\|\alpha-\alpha^{*}\right\|+\|\eta\| \leq \epsilon_{n}}\left|\frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=2}^{n}\left[g\left(Y_{t-1}-\underline{X}_{t-1}^{\prime} \eta, Y_{t}-\underline{X}_{t}^{\prime} \eta, \alpha, \beta\right)-g\left(Y_{t-1}, Y_{t}, \alpha^{*}, \beta\right)\right]\right|=o_{p}(1) .
\end{aligned}
$$

Thus, $\sup _{\beta \in \mathcal{B}}\left|\widehat{Q}_{n}(\beta)-Q_{n}(\beta)\right|=o_{p}(1)$. In addition with Assumption ID1, Theorem 1 is proved.

## D.1.2. Proof of Theorem 2 for the limiting Distribution of $\widehat{\beta}_{P}$

Let $g\left(\widehat{Y}_{t-1}, \widehat{Y}_{t}, \widehat{\alpha}, \beta\right)=\log c\left(F\left(\widehat{Y}_{t-1}, \widehat{\alpha}\right), F\left(\widehat{Y}_{t}, \widehat{\alpha}\right), \beta\right)$, then $\widehat{Q}_{n}(\beta)=\frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=2}^{n} g\left(\widehat{Y}_{t-1}, \widehat{Y}_{t}, \widehat{\alpha}, \beta\right)$. Let $\sqrt{n}\left(\beta-\beta^{*}\right)=\Delta_{2}$, and $D_{n}\left(\widehat{\pi}-\pi^{*}\right)=\delta_{n}, \sqrt{n}\left(\widehat{\alpha}-\alpha^{*}\right)=\Delta_{1 n}, \sqrt{n}\left(\widehat{\beta}-\beta^{*}\right)=\Delta_{2 n}$, then, we may re-write the criterion function $\widehat{Q}_{n}(\beta)$ as

$$
=\frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=2}^{n} g\left(Y_{t-1}-n^{-1 / 2}\left(X_{t-1}^{\prime} n^{1 / 2} D_{n}^{-1}\right) \delta_{n}, Y_{t}-n^{-1 / 2}\left(X_{t}^{\prime} n^{1 / 2} D_{n}^{-1}\right) \delta_{n}, \alpha^{*}+n^{-1 / 2} \Delta_{1 n}, \beta^{*}+n^{-1 / 2} \Delta_{2}\right) .
$$

and $\min _{\beta} \widehat{Q}_{n}(\beta)$ is equivalent to $\min _{\Delta_{2}} V_{n}\left(\Delta_{2}\right)$.
The FOC to minimize $V_{n}\left(\Delta_{2}\right)$ w.r.t. $\Delta_{2}$ is given by $\left.\frac{\partial V_{n}\left(\Delta_{2}\right)}{\partial \Delta_{2}}\right|_{\Delta_{2}=\Delta_{2 n}}=0$. Expanding $\left.\frac{\partial V_{n}\left(\Delta_{2}\right)}{\partial \Delta_{2}}\right|_{\Delta_{2}=\Delta_{2 n}}$ around $\Delta_{2}=0$, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
0 & =\left.\frac{\partial V_{n}\left(\Delta_{2}\right)}{\partial \Delta_{2}}\right|_{\Delta_{2}=\Delta_{2 n}} \\
& =\frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=2}^{n} g_{\beta}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t-1}, \widehat{Y}_{t}, \widehat{\alpha}, \beta^{*}\right)+n^{-1 / 2}\left[\frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=2}^{n} g_{\beta \beta}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t-1}, \widehat{Y}_{t}, \widehat{\alpha}, \beta^{\#}\right)\right] \Delta_{2 n}
\end{aligned}
$$

where $\beta^{\#}$ is the middle value between $\beta^{*}$ and $\widehat{\beta}$.
Let $\widehat{H}_{n \beta}=-n^{-1} \sum_{t=2}^{n} g_{\beta \beta}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t-1}, \widehat{Y}_{t}, \widehat{\alpha}, \beta^{\#}\right), \widehat{S}_{n \beta}=n^{-1 / 2} \sum_{t=2}^{n} g_{\beta}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t-1}, \widehat{Y}_{t}, \widehat{\alpha}, \beta^{*}\right)$, and $\eta=$ $\left(\eta_{1}^{\prime}, \eta_{2}^{\prime}, \eta_{3}^{\prime}\right)^{\prime}$. By consistency of $\widehat{\beta}$, Assumptions X and M2, for any sequence $\left\{\epsilon_{n}\right\}$ with $\epsilon_{n}=o(1)$, we have for $j=1,2$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \sup _{\|\eta\| \leq \epsilon_{n}} \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=2}^{n}\left\|g_{\beta \beta}\left(Y_{t-1}+\underline{X}_{t-1}^{\prime} \eta_{1}, Y_{t}+\underline{X}_{t}^{\prime} \eta_{1}, \alpha^{*}+\eta_{2}, \beta^{*}+\eta_{3}\right)-g_{\beta \beta}\left(Y_{t-1}, Y_{t}, \alpha^{*}, \beta^{*}\right)\right\|=o_{p}(1) \\
& \sup _{\|\eta\| \leq \epsilon_{n}} \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=2}^{n}\left\|g_{\beta \alpha}\left(Y_{t-1}+\underline{X}_{t-1}^{\prime} \eta_{1}, Y_{t}+\underline{X}_{t}^{\prime} \eta_{1}, \alpha^{*}+\eta_{2}, \beta^{*}+\eta_{3}\right)-g_{\beta \alpha}\left(Y_{t-1}, Y_{t}, \alpha^{*}, \beta^{*}\right)\right\|=o_{p}(1) \\
& \sup _{\|\eta\| \leq \epsilon_{n}} \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=2}^{n}\left\|g_{\beta j}\left(Y_{t-1}+\underline{X}_{t-1}^{\prime} \eta_{1}, Y_{t}+\underline{X}_{t}^{\prime} \eta_{1}, \alpha^{*}+\eta_{2}, \beta^{*}+\eta_{3}\right)-g_{\beta j}\left(Y_{t-1}, Y_{t}, \alpha^{*}, \beta^{*}\right)\right\|=o_{p}(1)
\end{aligned}
$$

we have

$$
\widehat{H}_{n \beta} \equiv H_{n \beta}+o_{p}(1)
$$

Denote

$$
S_{n \beta}=\frac{1}{\sqrt{n}} \sum_{t=2}^{n} g_{\beta}\left(Y_{t-1}, Y_{t}, \alpha^{*}, \beta^{*}\right)
$$

and expanding $g_{\beta}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t-1}, \widehat{Y}_{t}, \widehat{\alpha}, \beta^{*}\right)$ around $\left(Y_{t-1}, Y_{t}, \alpha^{*}\right)$, Using a similar argument as for the previous term, we can show that

$$
\begin{aligned}
\widehat{S}_{n \beta}= & S_{n \beta}+n^{-1} \sum_{t=2}^{n} g_{\beta 1}\left(Y_{t-1}, Y_{t}, \alpha^{*}, \beta^{*}\right) X_{t-1}^{\prime} n^{1 / 2} D_{n}^{-1} \delta_{n} \\
& +n^{-1} \sum_{t=2}^{n} g_{\beta 2}\left(Y_{t-1}, Y_{t}, \alpha^{*}, \beta^{*}\right)\left(X_{t}^{\prime} n^{1 / 2} D_{n}^{-1}\right) \delta_{n}+n^{-1} \sum_{t=2}^{n} g_{\beta \alpha}\left(Y_{t-1}, Y_{t}, \alpha^{*}, \beta^{*}\right) \Delta_{1 n}+o_{p}(1)
\end{aligned}
$$

Thus,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \sqrt{n}\left(\widehat{\beta}-\beta^{*}\right) \\
= & H_{n \beta}^{-1} S_{n \beta}-H_{n \beta}^{-1}\left(P_{n 1}+P_{n 2}\right) D_{n}\left(\widehat{\pi}-\pi^{*}\right)+H_{n \beta}^{-1} P_{n 3} \sqrt{n}\left(\widehat{\alpha}-\alpha^{*}\right)+o_{p}(1) \\
= & H_{\beta^{*}}^{-1} N\left(0, \Omega_{\beta^{*}}\right)-H_{\beta^{*}}^{-1}\left(P_{1}+P_{2}\right) D_{n}\left(\widehat{\pi}-\pi^{*}\right)+H_{\beta^{*}}^{-1} P_{3} \sqrt{n}\left(\widehat{\alpha}-\alpha^{*}\right)+o_{p}(1) \\
= & H_{\beta^{*}}^{-1} N\left(0, \Omega_{\beta^{*}}\right)-H_{\beta^{*}}^{-1}\left(P_{1}+P_{2}+P_{3} \Omega_{\alpha}^{-1} H_{\alpha Y}\right) D_{n}\left(\widehat{\pi}-\pi^{*}\right)+H_{\beta^{*}}^{-1} P_{3} \sqrt{n}\left(\widetilde{\alpha}-\alpha^{*}\right)+o_{p}(1)
\end{aligned}
$$

Notice that $\sqrt{n}\left(\widetilde{\alpha}-\alpha^{*}\right)=H_{n \alpha}^{-1} S_{n \alpha}+o_{p}(1)$, where

$$
H_{n \alpha}=-\frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=1}^{n} \frac{\partial^{2} \log f\left(Y_{t}, \alpha^{*}\right)}{\partial \alpha \partial \alpha^{\prime}} ; S_{n \alpha}=\frac{1}{\sqrt{n}} \sum_{t=1}^{n} \frac{\partial \log f\left(Y_{t}, \alpha^{*}\right)}{\partial \alpha}
$$

thus,

$$
\sqrt{n}\left(\widehat{\beta}-\beta^{*}\right)=H_{n \beta}^{-1}\left[S_{n \beta}+P_{n 3} H_{n \alpha}^{-1} S_{n \alpha}\right]-H_{\beta^{*}}^{-1}\left(P_{1}+P_{2}+P_{3} \Omega_{\alpha}^{-1} H_{\alpha Y}\right) D_{n}\left(\widehat{\pi}-\pi^{*}\right)+o_{p}(1)
$$

## D.2. Proof of Theorem 5.

Very similar to the proof of Theorem 3 , except that we use pseudo-true copula parameter, and hence omitted.

## D.3. Proof of Theorem 6.

Very similar to the proof of Theorem 4, except that we use pseudo-true copula parameter, and hence omitted.

## D.4. Proof of Theorem 7.

Let

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \widehat{S}_{t+h}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}, \widehat{\beta}_{S P}\right)=\ell_{\beta}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t+h-1}\right), \widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t+h}\right), \widehat{\beta}_{S P}\right)+\widehat{G}_{0}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t+h}\right)\right)+\widehat{G}_{1}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t+h-1}\right)\right) \\
& S_{t+h}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}, \widehat{\beta}_{S P}\right)=\ell_{\beta}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t+h-1}\right), \widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t+h}\right), \widehat{\beta}_{S P}\right)+G_{0}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t+h}\right)\right)+G_{1}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t+h-1}\right)\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

For simplicity of notation, we assume that $\beta$ is a scalar in the rest of the proof.

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \widehat{\gamma}_{n}(h)=\frac{1}{n} \sum_{\substack{t=2 \\
2 \leq t, t+h \leq n}}^{n} \widehat{S}_{t}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}, \widehat{\beta}_{S P}\right) \widehat{S}_{t+h}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}, \widehat{\beta}_{S P}\right) \\
& \gamma_{n 1}(h)=\frac{1}{n} \sum_{\substack{t=2 \\
2 \leq t, t+h \leq n}}^{n} S_{t}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}, \widehat{\beta}_{S P}\right) S_{t+h}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}, \widehat{\beta}_{S P}\right) \\
& \gamma_{n 2}(h)=\frac{1}{n} \sum_{\substack{t=2 \\
2 \leq t, t+h \leq n}}^{n} S_{t}\left(F^{*}, \widehat{\beta}_{S P}\right) S_{t+h}\left(F^{*}, \widehat{\beta}_{S P}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\gamma_{n}(h)=\frac{1}{n} \sum_{\substack{t=2 \\ 2 \leq t, t+h \leq n}}^{n} S_{t}\left(F^{*}, \bar{\beta}\right) S_{t+h}\left(F^{*}, \bar{\beta}\right)
$$

We may re-write the variance estimator $\widehat{\Omega}_{\beta}^{+}$as:

$$
\begin{aligned}
\widehat{\Omega}_{\beta}^{+}= & \sum_{h=-M}^{M} K\left(\frac{h}{M}\right) \widehat{\gamma}_{n}(h) \\
= & \sum_{h=-M}^{M} K\left(\frac{h}{M}\right) \gamma_{n}(h)+\sum_{h=-M}^{M} K\left(\frac{h}{M}\right)\left[\gamma_{n 2}(h)-\gamma_{n}(h)\right] \\
& +\sum_{h=-M}^{M} K\left(\frac{h}{M}\right)\left[\gamma_{n 1}(h)-\gamma_{n 2}(h)\right]+\sum_{h=-M}^{M} K\left(\frac{h}{M}\right)\left[\widehat{\gamma}_{n}(h)-\gamma_{n 1}(h)\right]
\end{aligned}
$$

The first part,

$$
\sum_{h=-M}^{M} K\left(\frac{h}{M}\right) \gamma_{n}(h)
$$

is the conventional long-run variance (spectral density) estimator, which converges to $\Omega_{\bar{\beta}}^{+}$by the standard arguments as Hannan (1970).

The second part,

$$
\sum_{h=-M}^{M} K\left(\frac{h}{M}\right)\left[\gamma_{n 2}(h)-\gamma_{n}(h)\right]
$$

contains the effect of copula estimation error $\left(\widehat{\beta}_{S P}-\bar{\beta}\right)$, this term converges to 0 following a similar argument as Andrews (1991, p852).

We now consider the third term,

$$
\sum_{h=-M}^{M} K\left(\frac{h}{M}\right)\left[\gamma_{n 1}(h)-\gamma_{n 2}(h)\right]
$$

which contains the estimation error from the filtration and the estimation of marginal. Notice that

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \gamma_{n 1}(h)=\frac{1}{n} \sum_{\substack{t=2 \\
2 \leq t, t+h \leq n}}^{n} S_{t}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}, \widehat{\beta}_{S P}\right) S_{t+h}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}, \widehat{\beta}_{S P}\right) \\
& \gamma_{n 2}(h)=\frac{1}{n} \sum_{\substack{t=2 \\
2 \leq t, t+h \leq n}}^{n} S_{t}\left(F^{*}, \widehat{\beta}_{S P}\right) S_{t+h}\left(F^{*}, \widehat{\beta}_{S P}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

thus

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \sum_{h=-M}^{M} K\left(\frac{h}{M}\right)\left[\gamma_{n 1}(h)-\gamma_{n 2}(h)\right] \\
= & \sum_{h=-M}^{M} K\left(\frac{h}{M}\right) \frac{1}{n} \sum_{\substack{t=2 \\
2 \leq t, t+h \leq n}}^{n}\left[S_{t}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}, \widehat{\beta}_{S P}\right)-S_{t}\left(F^{*}, \widehat{\beta}_{S P}\right)\right]\left[S_{t+h}\left(F^{*}, \widehat{\beta}_{S P}\right)\right] \\
& +\sum_{h=-M}^{M} K\left(\frac{h}{M}\right) \frac{1}{n} \sum_{\substack{t=2 \\
2 \leq t, t+h \leq n}}^{n}\left[S_{t}\left(F^{*}, \widehat{\beta}_{S P}\right)\right]\left[S_{t+h}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}, \widehat{\beta}_{S P}\right)-S_{t+h}\left(F^{*}, \widehat{\beta}_{S P}\right)\right] \\
& +\sum_{h=-M}^{M} K\left(\frac{h}{M}\right) \frac{1}{n} \sum_{\substack{t=2 \\
2 \leq t, t+h \leq n}}^{n}\left[S_{t}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}, \widehat{\beta}_{S P}\right)-S_{t}\left(F^{*}, \widehat{\beta}_{S P}\right)\right]\left[S_{t+h}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}, \widehat{\beta}_{S P}\right)-S_{t+h}\left(F^{*}, \widehat{\beta}_{S P}\right)\right]
\end{aligned}
$$

We can verify the order of magnitude for each of these terms. For example, consider the second term

$$
\sum_{h=-M}^{M} K\left(\frac{h}{M}\right) \frac{1}{n} \sum_{\substack{t=2 \\ 2 \leq t, t+h \leq n}}^{n}\left[S_{t}\left(F^{*}, \widehat{\beta}_{S P}\right)\right]\left[S_{t+h}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}, \widehat{\beta}_{S P}\right)-S_{t+h}\left(F^{*}, \widehat{\beta}_{S P}\right)\right]
$$

notice that

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \sum_{h=-M}^{M} K\left(\frac{h}{M}\right) \frac{1}{n} \sum_{\substack{t=2 \\
2 \leq t, t+h \leq n}}^{n} S_{t}\left(F^{*}, \widehat{\beta}_{S P}\right)\left[S_{t+h}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}, \widehat{\beta}_{S P}\right)-S_{t+h}\left(F^{*}, \widehat{\beta}_{S P}\right)\right] \\
\approx & \sum_{h=-M}^{M} K\left(\frac{h}{M}\right) \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t} S_{t}\left(F^{*}, \widehat{\beta}_{S P}\right) \ell_{\beta 1}\left(U_{t+h-1}, U_{t+h}, \widehat{\beta}_{S P}\right)\left(\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t+h-1}\right)-F^{*}\left(Y_{t+h-1}\right)\right) \\
& +\sum_{h=-M}^{M} K\left(\frac{h}{M}\right) \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t} S_{t}\left(F^{*}, \widehat{\beta}_{S P}\right) \ell_{\beta 2}\left(U_{t+h-1}, U_{t+h}, \widehat{\beta}_{S P}\right)\left(\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t+h}\right)-F^{*}\left(Y_{t+h}\right)\right) \\
& -\sum_{h=-M}^{M} K\left(\frac{h}{M}\right) \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t} S_{t}\left(F^{*}, \widehat{\beta}_{S P}\right) \frac{\partial G_{0}\left(U_{t+h}, \widehat{\beta}_{S P}\right)}{\partial U_{t+h}}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t+h}\right)-F^{*}\left(Y_{t+h}\right)\right) \\
& -\sum_{h=-M}^{M} K\left(\frac{h}{M}\right) \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t} S_{t}\left(F^{*}, \widehat{\beta}_{S P}\right) \frac{\left.\partial G_{1}\left(U_{t+h-1}, \widehat{\beta}_{S P}\right)\right)}{\partial U_{t+h-1}}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t+h-1}\right)-F^{*}\left(Y_{t+h-1}\right)\right),
\end{aligned}
$$

under our regularity assumptions, the order of magnitude for each of these terms are $o_{p}(1)$. For example

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left|\sum_{h=-M}^{M} K\left(\frac{h}{M}\right) \frac{1}{n} \sum_{\substack{t=2 \\
2 \leq t, t+h \leq n}}^{n} S_{t}\left(F^{*}, \widehat{\beta}\right) \ell_{\beta 1}\left(U_{t+h-1}, U_{t+h}, \widehat{\beta}_{S P}\right)\left(\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t+h-1}\right)-F\left(Y_{t+h-1}\right)\right)\right| \\
\leq & \frac{1}{\sqrt{n}} \frac{1}{n} \sum_{h=-M}^{M} \sum_{\substack{t=2 \\
2 \leq t, t+h \leq n}}^{n}\left|K\left(\frac{h}{M}\right)\right| \sup _{F \in \mathcal{F}_{\delta}}\left|S_{t}\left(F^{*}, \widehat{\beta}\right) w\left(F^{*}\left(Y_{t+h+j-2}\right)\right) \ell_{\beta 1}\left(U_{t+h-1}, U_{t+h}, \widehat{\beta}\right)\right| \\
& \times\left|\frac{\sqrt{n}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t+h+j-2}\right)-F^{*}\left(Y_{t+h+j-2}\right)\right)}{w\left(F^{*}\left(Y_{t+h+j-2}\right)\right)}\right|
\end{aligned}
$$

under our regularity assumptions and the bandwidth condition, the above term is $o_{p}(1)$.
Other terms can be verified to be $o_{p}(1)$ using similar arguments.
Finally,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left|\sum_{h=-M}^{M} K\left(\frac{h}{M}\right)\left[\widehat{\gamma}_{n}(h)-\gamma_{n 1}(h)\right]\right| \\
\leq & \sum_{h=-M}^{M} K\left(\frac{h}{M}\right)\left|\frac{1}{n} \sum_{\substack{t=2 \\
2 \leq t, t+h \leq n}}^{n} S_{t}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}, \widehat{\beta}_{S P}\right)\left[\widehat{S}_{t+h}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}, \widehat{\beta}_{S P}\right)-S_{t+h}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}, \widehat{\beta}_{S P}\right)\right]\right| \\
& +\sum_{h=-M}^{M} K\left(\frac{h}{M}\right)\left|\frac{1}{n} \sum_{\substack{t=2 \\
2 \leq t, t+h \leq n}}^{n}\left[\widehat{S}_{t}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}, \widehat{\beta}_{S P}\right)-S_{t}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}, \widehat{\beta}_{S P}\right)\right]\left[S_{t+h}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}, \widehat{\beta}_{S P}\right)\right]\right| \\
& +\sum_{h=-M}^{M} K\left(\frac{h}{M}\right)\left|\frac{1}{n} \sum_{\substack{t=2 \\
2 \leq t, t+h \leq n}}^{n}\left[\widehat{S}_{t}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}, \widehat{\beta}_{S P}\right)-S_{t}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}, \widehat{\beta}_{S P}\right)\right]\left[\widehat{S}_{t+h}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}, \widehat{\beta}_{S P}\right)-S_{t+h}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}, \widehat{\beta}_{S P}\right)\right]\right| .
\end{aligned}
$$

Under regularity assumptions, for a neighborhood $B_{n}(\bar{\beta})$ of $\bar{\beta}$ and an appropriately chosen $\epsilon_{n} \rightarrow 0$, as $n \rightarrow \infty$, for $j=0,1$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \sup _{\substack{\epsilon_{n} \leq u \leq 1-\epsilon_{n} \\
\beta \in B_{n}(\bar{\beta})}}\left|\left[\frac{1}{n} \sum_{l=2}^{n}\left\{\ell_{\beta, 2-j}\left(U_{l-1}, U_{l} ; \beta\right)\left[1\left(u \leq U_{l-j}\right)-U_{l-j}\right]-\mathrm{E} \ell_{\beta, 2}\left(U_{l-1}, U_{l} ; \beta\right)\left[1\left(u \leq U_{l-j}\right)-U_{l-j}\right]\right\}\right]\right| \\
= & o_{p}\left(\frac{1}{M}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

thus

$$
\sup _{\epsilon_{n} \leq u \leq 1-\epsilon_{n}, \beta \in B_{n}(\bar{\beta})} \sup \left|\widehat{G}_{j}(u, \beta)-G_{j}(u, \beta)\right|=o_{p}\left(\frac{1}{M}\right), j=0,1 .
$$

and $\left|\sum_{h=-M}^{M} K\left(\frac{h}{M}\right)\left[\widehat{\gamma}_{n}(h)-\gamma_{n 1}(h)\right]\right|=o_{p}(1)$.

## D.5. Proof of Theorem 8.

We show that the filtration does not affect the limiting distribution. Expanding $\log c_{2}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t-1}\right), \widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t}\right), \bar{\beta}_{2}\right)$ around $\widehat{\beta}_{2}$, and notice that the FOC corresponding to $\widehat{\beta}_{2}$ implies

$$
\sum_{t} \frac{\partial \log c_{2}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t-1}\right), \widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t}\right), \widehat{\beta}_{2}\right)}{\partial \beta}=0
$$

(1) Generalized non-nested case,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \operatorname{Pr}\left[\log \frac{c_{2}\left(U_{t-1}, U_{t}, \bar{\beta}_{2}\right)}{c_{1}\left(U_{t-1}, U_{t}, \bar{\beta}_{1}\right)} \neq \mathrm{E}\left[\log \frac{c_{2}\left(U_{t-1}, U_{t}, \bar{\beta}_{2}\right)}{c_{1}\left(U_{t-1}, U_{t}, \bar{\beta}_{1}\right)}\right]\right]>0 \\
& \operatorname{Pr}\left[\frac{\partial \log c_{2}\left(U_{t-1}, U_{t}, \bar{\beta}_{2}\right)}{\partial U_{t-2+j}} \neq \frac{\partial \log c_{1}\left(U_{t-1}, U_{t}, \bar{\beta}_{1}\right)}{\partial U_{t-2+j}}\right]>0
\end{aligned}
$$

we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=2}^{n} \log c_{2}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t-1}\right), \widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t}\right), \widehat{\beta}_{2}\right) \\
= & \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=2}^{n} \log c_{2}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t-1}\right), \widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t}\right), \bar{\beta}_{2}\right)-\frac{1}{2 n} \sum_{t=2}^{n}\left(\bar{\beta}_{2}-\widehat{\beta}_{2}\right)^{\prime} \frac{\partial^{2} \log c_{2}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t-1}\right), \widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t}\right), \overline{\bar{\beta}}_{2}\right)}{\partial \beta \partial \beta^{\prime}}\left(\bar{\beta}_{2}-\widehat{\beta}_{2}\right) \\
= & \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=2}^{n} \log c_{2}\left(U_{t-1}, U_{t}, \bar{\beta}_{2}\right)+\frac{1}{n} \sum_{j=1}^{2} \sum_{t=2}^{n} \frac{\partial \log c_{2}\left(U_{t-1}, U_{t}, \bar{\beta}_{2}\right)}{\partial U_{t-2+j}}\left[\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t-2+j}\right)-F^{*}\left(Y_{t-2+j}\right)\right]+o_{p}\left(n^{-1 / 2}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

and

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \widehat{L R}_{n}=\frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=2}^{n} \log \frac{c_{2}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t-1}\right), \widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t}\right), \widehat{\beta}_{2}\right)}{c_{1}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t-1}\right), \widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t}\right), \widehat{\beta}_{1}\right)} \\
& =\frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=2}^{n} \log \frac{c_{2}\left(U_{t-1}, U_{t}, \bar{\beta}_{2}\right)}{c_{1}\left(U_{t-1}, U_{t}, \bar{\beta}_{1}\right)} \\
& \quad+\frac{1}{n} \sum_{j=1}^{2} \sum_{t=2}^{n}\left\{\frac{\partial \log c_{2}\left(U_{t-1}, U_{t}, \bar{\beta}_{2}\right)}{\partial U_{t-2+j}}-\frac{\partial \log c_{1}\left(U_{t-1}, U_{t}, \bar{\beta}_{1}\right)}{\partial U_{t-2+j}}\right\}\left[\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t-2+j}\right)-F^{*}\left(Y_{t-2+j}\right)\right]+o_{p}\left(n^{-1 / 2}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

Thus

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \widehat{L R}_{n}-\mathrm{E}\left[\log \frac{c_{2}\left(U_{t-1}, U_{t}, \bar{\beta}_{2}\right)}{c_{1}\left(U_{t-1}, U_{t}, \bar{\beta}_{1}\right)}\right] \\
= & \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=2}^{n}\left[\log \frac{c_{2}\left(U_{t-1}, U_{t}, \bar{\beta}_{2}\right)}{c_{1}\left(U_{t-1}, U_{t}, \bar{\beta}_{1}\right)}-\mathrm{E}\left[\log \frac{c_{2}\left(U_{t-1}, U_{t}, \bar{\beta}_{2}\right)}{c_{1}\left(U_{t-1}, U_{t}, \bar{\beta}_{1}\right)}\right]\right] \\
& +\frac{1}{n} \sum_{j=1}^{2} \sum_{t=2}^{n}\left\{\frac{\partial \log c_{2}\left(U_{t-1}, U_{t}, \bar{\beta}_{2}\right)}{\partial U_{t-2+j}}-\frac{\partial \log c_{1}\left(U_{t-1}, U_{t}, \bar{\beta}_{1}\right)}{\partial U_{t-2+j}}\right\}\left[\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t-2+j}\right)-F^{*}\left(Y_{t-2+j}\right)\right] \\
& +o_{p}\left(n^{-1 / 2}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \frac{1}{n} \sum_{j=1}^{2} \sum_{t=2}^{n} \frac{\partial \log c_{2}\left(U_{t-1}, U_{t}, \bar{\beta}_{2}\right)}{\partial U_{t-2+j}}\left[\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t-2+j}\right)-F^{*}\left(Y_{t-2+j}\right)\right] \\
= & \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=2}^{n} \frac{\partial \log c_{2}\left(U_{t-1}, U_{t}, \bar{\beta}_{2}\right)}{\partial U_{t-1}}\left[\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t-1}\right)-F_{n}\left(Y_{t-1}\right)\right] \\
& +\frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=2}^{n} \frac{\partial \log c_{2}\left(U_{t-1}, U_{t}, \bar{\beta}_{2}\right)}{\partial U_{t}}\left[\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t}\right)-F_{n}\left(Y_{t}\right)\right] \\
& +\frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=2}^{n} \frac{\partial \log c_{2}\left(U_{t-1}, U_{t}, \bar{\beta}_{2}\right)}{\partial U_{t-1}}\left[F_{n}\left(Y_{t-1}\right)-F^{*}\left(Y_{t-1}\right)\right] \\
& +\frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=2}^{n} \frac{\partial \log c_{2}\left(U_{t-1}, U_{t}, \bar{\beta}_{2}\right)}{\partial U_{t}}\left[F_{n}\left(Y_{t}\right)-F^{*}\left(Y_{t}\right)\right]
\end{aligned}
$$

Using similar argument as in the proof of Theorem 4, we can show

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=2}^{n} \frac{\partial \log c_{2}\left(U_{t-1}, U_{t}, \bar{\beta}_{2}\right)}{\partial U_{t}}\left[\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t}\right)-F_{n}\left(Y_{t}\right)\right] \\
= & \frac{1}{\sqrt{n}} \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=2}^{n} \frac{\partial \log c_{2}\left(U_{t-1}, U_{t}, \bar{\beta}_{2}\right)}{\partial U_{t}} f^{*}\left(Y_{t}\right) \frac{1}{n} \sum_{j=1}^{n}\left[\left(X_{j}^{\prime}-X_{t}^{\prime}\right) D_{n}^{-1} n^{1 / 2}\right] D_{n}\left(\widehat{\pi}-\pi^{*}\right)+o_{p}\left(n^{-1 / 2}\right) \\
= & \frac{1}{\sqrt{n}} \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=2}^{n} \frac{\partial \log c_{2}\left(U_{t-1}, U_{t}, \bar{\beta}_{2}\right)}{\partial U_{t}} f^{*}\left(Y_{t}\right) \frac{1}{n} \sum_{j=1}^{n}\left[X_{j}^{\prime} D_{n}^{-1} n^{1 / 2}\right] D_{n}\left(\widehat{\pi}-\pi^{*}\right) \\
& -\frac{1}{\sqrt{n}} \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=2}^{n} \frac{\partial \log c_{2}\left(U_{t-1}, U_{t}, \bar{\beta}_{2}\right)}{\partial U_{t}} f^{*}\left(Y_{t}\right) \frac{1}{n} \sum_{j=1}^{n}\left[X_{t}^{\prime} D_{n}^{-1} n^{1 / 2}\right] D_{n}\left(\widehat{\pi}-\pi^{*}\right)+o_{p}\left(n^{-1 / 2}\right) \\
= & o_{p}\left(n^{-1 / 2}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

and thus

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \frac{1}{n} \sum_{j=1}^{2} \sum_{t=2}^{n}\left\{\frac{\partial \log c_{2}\left(U_{t-1}, U_{t}, \bar{\beta}_{2}\right)}{\partial U_{t-2+j}}-\frac{\partial \log c_{1}\left(U_{t-1}, U_{t}, \bar{\beta}_{1}\right)}{\partial U_{t-2+j}}\right\}\left[\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t-2+j}\right)-F^{*}\left(Y_{t-2+j}\right)\right] \\
= & \frac{1}{n} \sum_{j=1}^{2} \sum_{t=2}^{n}\left\{\frac{\partial \log c_{2}\left(U_{t-1}, U_{t}, \bar{\beta}_{2}\right)}{\partial U_{t-2+j}}-\frac{\partial \log c_{1}\left(U_{t-1}, U_{t}, \bar{\beta}_{1}\right)}{\partial U_{t-2+j}}\right\}\left[F_{n}\left(Y_{t-2+j}\right)-F^{*}\left(Y_{t-2+j}\right)\right]+o_{p}\left(n^{-1 / 2}\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

Let

$$
g_{t, i j}\left(\bar{\beta}_{i}\right)=\mathrm{E}\left\{\left.\left[\frac{\partial \log c_{i}\left(U_{s-1}, U_{s}, \bar{\beta}_{i}\right)}{\partial U_{s-2+j}}\right]\left[1\left(U_{t} \leq U_{s-2+j}\right)-U_{s-2+j}\right] \right\rvert\, U_{t}\right\} .
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \frac{1}{\sqrt{n}} \sum_{j=1}^{2} \sum_{t=2}^{n}\left\{\frac{\partial \log c_{2}\left(U_{t-1}, U_{t}, \bar{\beta}_{2}\right)}{\partial U_{t-2+j}}-\frac{\partial \log c_{1}\left(U_{t-1}, U_{t}, \bar{\beta}_{1}\right)}{\partial U_{t-2+j}}\right\}\left[F_{n}\left(Y_{t-2+j}\right)-F^{*}\left(Y_{t-2+j}\right)\right] \\
= & \frac{1}{\sqrt{n}} \sum_{j=1}^{2} \sum_{l=2}^{n} \mathrm{E}\left\{\left.\left[\frac{\partial \log c_{2}\left(U_{t-1}, U_{t}, \bar{\beta}_{2}\right)}{\partial U_{t-2+j}}-\frac{\partial \log c_{1}\left(U_{t-1}, U_{t}, \bar{\beta}_{1}\right)}{\partial U_{t-2+j}}\right]\left[1\left(U_{l} \leq U_{t-2+j}\right)-U_{t-2+j}\right] \right\rvert\, U_{l}\right\} \\
= & \sum_{j=1}^{2}\left[\frac{1}{\sqrt{n}} \sum_{l=2}^{n}\left\{g_{l, 2 j}\left(\bar{\beta}_{2}\right)-g_{l, 1 j}\left(\bar{\beta}_{1}\right)\right\}\right],
\end{aligned}
$$

we have

$$
\left.\left.\begin{array}{rl} 
& \sqrt{n}(\widehat{L R} \\
n
\end{array}\right) \mathrm{E}\left[\log \frac{c_{2}\left(U_{t-1}, U_{t}, \bar{\beta}_{2}\right)}{c_{1}\left(U_{t-1}, U_{t}, \bar{\beta}_{1}\right)}\right]\right) .
$$

(2) Generalized nested case. Denote

$$
H_{j n}=-\frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=2}^{n} \frac{\partial^{2} \log c_{j}\left(\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t-1}\right), \widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t}\right), \bar{\beta}_{j}\right)}{\partial \beta \partial \beta^{\prime}} \rightarrow H_{j, \bar{\beta}}
$$

Notice that

$$
\operatorname{Pr}\left[c_{2}\left(U_{t-1}, U_{t}, \bar{\beta}_{2}\right)=c_{1}\left(U_{t-1}, U_{t}, \bar{\beta}_{1}\right)\right]=1
$$

thus

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \operatorname{Pr}\left[\log \frac{c_{2}\left(U_{t-1}, U_{t}, \bar{\beta}_{2}\right)}{c_{1}\left(U_{t-1}, U_{t}, \bar{\beta}_{1}\right)}=0=\mathrm{E}\left[\log \frac{c_{2}\left(U_{t-1}, U_{t}, \bar{\beta}_{2}\right)}{c_{1}\left(U_{t-1}, U_{t}, \bar{\beta}_{1}\right)}\right]\right]=1 \\
& \operatorname{Pr}\left[\frac{\partial \log c_{2}\left(U_{t-1}, U_{t}, \bar{\beta}_{2}\right)}{\partial U_{t-2+j}}=\frac{\partial \log c_{1}\left(U_{t-1}, U_{t}, \bar{\beta}_{1}\right)}{\partial U_{t-2+j}}\right]=1
\end{aligned}
$$

thus,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \widehat{L R}_{n}-\mathrm{E}\left[\log \frac{c_{2}\left(U_{t-1}, U_{t}, \bar{\beta}_{2}\right)}{c_{1}\left(U_{t-1}, U_{t}, \bar{\beta}_{1}\right)}\right] \\
= & \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=2}^{n}\left[\log \frac{c_{2}\left(U_{t-1}, U_{t}, \bar{\beta}_{2}\right)}{c_{1}\left(U_{t-1}, U_{t}, \bar{\beta}_{1}\right)}-\mathrm{E}\left[\log \frac{c_{2}\left(U_{t-1}, U_{t}, \bar{\beta}_{2}\right)}{c_{1}\left(U_{t-1}, U_{t}, \bar{\beta}_{1}\right)}\right]\right] \\
& +\frac{1}{n} \sum_{j=1}^{2} \sum_{t=2}^{n}\left\{\frac{\partial \log c_{2}\left(U_{t-1}, U_{t}, \bar{\beta}_{2}\right)}{\partial U_{t-2+j}}-\frac{\partial \log c_{1}\left(U_{t-1}, U_{t}, \bar{\beta}_{1}\right)}{\partial U_{t-2+j}}\right\}\left[\widehat{F}_{n}\left(\widehat{Y}_{t-2+j}\right)-F^{*}\left(Y_{t-2+j}\right)\right] \\
& +\frac{1}{2}\left(\bar{\beta}_{2}-\widehat{\beta}_{2}\right)^{\prime} H_{2 n}\left(\bar{\beta}_{2}-\widehat{\beta}_{2}\right)-\frac{1}{2}\left(\bar{\beta}_{1}-\widehat{\beta}_{1}\right)^{\prime} H_{1 n}\left(\bar{\beta}_{1}-\widehat{\beta}_{1}\right)+ \\
= & \frac{1}{2}\left(\bar{\beta}_{2}-\widehat{\beta}_{2}\right)^{\prime} H_{2 n}\left(\bar{\beta}_{2}-\widehat{\beta}_{2}\right)-\frac{1}{2}\left(\bar{\beta}_{1}-\widehat{\beta}_{1}\right)^{\prime} H_{1 n}\left(\bar{\beta}_{1}-\widehat{\beta}_{1}\right)+o_{p}\left(\frac{1}{n}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

Let

$$
\mathcal{G}_{j, n}\left(\bar{\beta}_{j}\right)=\frac{1}{\sqrt{n}} \sum_{t=2}^{n}\left\{\frac{\partial \log c_{j}\left(U_{t-1}, U_{t}, \bar{\beta}_{j}\right)}{\partial \beta}+G_{j, 0}\left(U_{t}, \bar{\beta}_{j}\right)+G_{j, 1}\left(U_{t-1}, \bar{\beta}_{j}\right)\right\}
$$

where for $l=0,1$,

$$
G_{j, l}\left(U_{t-l}, \bar{\beta}_{j}\right)=\int_{0}^{1} \int_{0}^{1} \frac{\partial^{2} \log c_{j}\left(v_{1}, v_{2}, \bar{\beta}_{j}\right)}{\partial \beta_{j} \partial v_{2-l}}\left[1\left(U_{t-l} \leq v_{2-l}\right)-v_{2-l}\right] c^{*}\left(v_{1}, v_{2}\right) d v_{1} d v_{2}
$$

then

$$
\left[\begin{array}{l}
\mathcal{G}_{2, n}\left(\bar{\beta}_{2}\right) \\
\mathcal{G}_{1, n}\left(\bar{\beta}_{1}\right)
\end{array}\right] \Rightarrow N\left(0,\left[\begin{array}{cc}
\Omega_{2, \beta}^{+} & \bar{\Omega}_{2,1} \\
\bar{\Omega}_{2,1}^{\prime} & \Omega_{1, \beta}^{+}
\end{array}\right]\right)
$$

Applying Theorem 6,

$$
\sqrt{n}\left(\widehat{\beta}_{j}-\bar{\beta}_{j}\right)=H_{j, \bar{\beta}}^{-1} \mathcal{G}_{j, n}\left(\bar{\beta}_{j}\right)+o_{p}(1) \Rightarrow N\left(0, H_{j, \beta}^{-1} \Omega_{j, \beta}^{+} H_{j, \bar{\beta}}^{-1}\right) .
$$

and

$$
\left.\begin{array}{rl} 
& n\left[\widehat{L R}_{n}-\mathrm{E}\left[\log \frac{c_{2}\left(U_{t-1}, U_{t}, \bar{\beta}_{2}\right)}{c_{1}\left(U_{t-1}, U_{t}, \bar{\beta}_{1}\right)}\right]\right] \\
= & \frac{1}{2} n\left(\bar{\beta}_{2}-\widehat{\beta}_{2}\right)^{\prime} H_{2 n}\left(\bar{\beta}_{2}-\widehat{\beta}_{2}\right)-\frac{1}{2} n\left(\bar{\beta}_{1}-\widehat{\beta}_{1}\right)^{\prime} H_{1 n}\left(\bar{\beta}_{1}-\widehat{\beta}_{1}\right)+o_{p}(1) \\
= & \frac{1}{2} \mathcal{G}_{2, n}\left(\bar{\beta}_{2}\right)^{\prime} H_{2, \bar{\beta}}^{-1}\left(H_{2 n}\right) H_{2, \bar{\beta}}^{-1} \mathcal{G}_{2, n}\left(\bar{\beta}_{2}\right)-\frac{1}{2} \mathcal{G}_{1, n}\left(\bar{\beta}_{1}\right)^{\prime} H_{1, \bar{\beta}}^{-1}\left(H_{1 n}\right) H_{1, \bar{\beta}}^{-1} \mathcal{G}_{1, n}\left(\bar{\beta}_{1}\right)+o_{p}(1) \\
= & \frac{1}{2}\left[\mathcal{G}_{2, n}\left(\bar{\beta}_{2}\right)^{\prime}\right. \\
\left.\mathcal{G}_{1, n}\left(\bar{\beta}_{1}\right)^{\prime}\right]
\end{array}\right]\left[\begin{array}{ll}
H_{2, \bar{\beta}}^{-1} & 0 \\
0 & -H_{1, \bar{\beta}}^{-1}
\end{array}\right]\left[\begin{array}{l}
\mathcal{G}_{2, n}\left(\bar{\beta}_{2}\right) \\
\mathcal{G}_{1, n}\left(\bar{\beta}_{1}\right)
\end{array}\right]+o_{p}(1) . . ~ \$
$$

Thus, under the null, $2 n \widehat{L R}_{n}$ converges to a weighted sum of independent $\chi_{1}^{2}$ random variables in which the weights $\left(\lambda_{1}, \cdots, \lambda_{d_{1}+d_{2}}\right)$ is the vector of eigenvalues of the following matrix

$$
\left[\begin{array}{cc}
\Omega_{2, \beta}^{+} H_{2, \bar{\beta}}^{-1} & \bar{\Omega}_{2,1} H_{1, \bar{\beta}}^{-1} \\
\bar{\Omega}_{2,1}^{\prime} H_{2, \bar{\beta}}^{-1} & \Omega_{1, \beta}^{+} H_{1, \bar{\beta}}^{-1}
\end{array}\right]=\left[\begin{array}{ll}
\Omega_{2, \beta}^{+} & \bar{\Omega}_{2,1} \\
\bar{\Omega}_{2,1}^{\prime} & \Omega_{1, \beta}^{+}
\end{array}\right]\left[\begin{array}{cc}
H_{2, \bar{\beta}}^{-1} & \\
& -H_{1, \bar{\beta}}^{-1}
\end{array}\right] .
$$


[^0]:    *Corresponding author. Cowles Foundation for Research in Economics, Yale University, Box 208281, New Haven, CT 06520, USA. Tel: 203-432-5852. Email: xiaohong.chen@yale.edu
    ${ }^{\dagger}$ Department of Economics, Boston College, Chestnut Hill, MA 02467, USA. Tel: 617-552-1709. Email: xiaoz@bc.edu.
    ${ }^{\ddagger}$ Department of Economics, Boston College, Chestnut Hill, MA 02467, USA. Email: wangkp@bc.edu

[^1]:    ${ }^{1}$ Previously, Joe and Xu (1996) and Joe (2005) studied two-step parametric estimation of copula parameter $\beta$ for iid data $\left\{\left(Y_{1, i}, \ldots, Y_{d, i}\right)\right\}_{i=1}^{n}$ of a multivariate random vector $\left(Y_{1}, \ldots, Y_{d}\right)$ whose concurrent copula density $c\left(F_{1}\left(Y_{1} ; \alpha_{1}\right), \ldots, F_{d}\left(Y_{d} ; \alpha_{d}\right) ; \beta\right)$ links different parametric marginal distributions $F_{j}\left(Y_{j} ; \alpha_{j}\right), j=1, \ldots, d$.

[^2]:    ${ }^{2}$ The infeasible semiparametric copula estimator $\tilde{\beta}_{S P}$ for Clayton copula with strong lower tail dependence has been shown to perform poorly (with big bias) in Chen, Wu and Yi (2009). Although Chen, Wu and Yi (2009) had shown that Clayton copula generated Markov process $\left\{Y_{t}\right\}$ is beta-mixing with exponential decay, Ibragimov and Lentzas (2017) provided simulation evidence that, in finite samples, the time series plot of the Clayton copula generated stationary Markov process $\left\{Y_{t}\right\}$ may exhibit a spurious long memory-like behavior when the lower tail dependence is very strong.

[^3]:    ${ }^{3}$ https://fred.stlouisfed.org/https://fred.stlouisfed.org/

